

The Role Of Works & Salvation



"Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ that we may be justified by faith, but after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster."

Galatians 3:24-25 KJV

DON GERRITY

The Role Of Works & Salvation

By Don E. Gerrity

Copyright © 2024. All rights reserved. Ontario Canada

BIBLES CITED...

[KJV]: (Unless otherwise marked the KJV is implied.) King James Version Publisher: Public Domain. Biblegateway.com Web.

Original Greek Meanings From This Great Online Ministry: Blue Letter Bible. Web. 11 Jul, 2016. (www.blueletterbible.org)>



SeekKnockFind.org

page 107

Choose Life Eternal!

*"I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore **choose life**, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days:..." (Deuteronomy 30:19-20 KJV)*

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I dedicate this book to all believers in Christ and to be sure that we understand the one thing **we must do** to be saved; believe in the complete sufficiency of the payment for all sins of the whole world, Jesus Christ Crucified , died and risen. Many 'Christian Religion Organizations' are just feeding the feelings of hopelessness telling people they must not sin after believing in Christ and that we must have good works after salvation or be lost forever in hell. These false teachers are pressing the teachings of condemnation and speak of a god ready to pounce on you at every turn, leaving you believing that YOU MUST SAVE YOURSELF by your works. That after salvation you must have good works to remain saved or you are a false convert. What they never tell you is 'how much' good much are required? What good works are required? That is not the God of the Bible! And that is NOT the Gospel of Grace through Christ Jesus the Lord.

Many church organizations and denominations today are not teaching the true Gospel of Jesus Christ from the Bible but instead are teaching either a '*feel good and live the good life now*' message and/or are teaching that '*good works*

and rituals are required' for God to accept us as a son or daughter in Salvation. They are doing this to control church membership with fear and with the goal of larger membership; **money!**

The Apostle Paul fought this very thing in his day. He wrote to warn believers and to refute the false teaching of the Judiazers that crept into the church in Galatians. Apostle John wrote to refute the Gnostic's heresy in 1 John as well.

Both of these heresies are rampant in the last days in which we now live. The most rampant heresy today is Lordship Salvation. These are the false teachings today and is the foretold Apostasy in the Church. In these Last Days, just as the Bible foretold would happen before Christ returns, we are in a fight for the true Gospel of Grace Through Christ Crucified; the message of Salvation that does not require works, nor rituals. My hope is that it opens your eyes to the true Biblical good news of the message of Salvation through the atonement provided by the Son of God; Jesus Christ, The Lord.

Table Of Contents

I. THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST

CH 1: Who Is Jesus Christ?.....	8
CH 2: Jesus Christ. The Lord OF The Old & New Testament.....	14
CH 3: Who Are 'The Unrepentant And Wicked'?.....	19
CH 4: Are You A Good Person? Are You Sure?.....	32
CH 5: Is Salvation By Works or Faith?.....	43
CH 6: What Does The Bible Mean By Repentance?.....	55
CH 7: Only Faith In Christ. Nothing Else Required.....	66
CH 8: What Does It Mean To Be Sealed With The Holy Spirit?.....	72

II. WORKS, PAUL AND JAMES ARE IN AGREEMENT

CH 9: Paul Taught That Salvation Is Not By Good Works.....	76
CH 10: What did James Mean By Faith Without Works Is Dead?.....	83
CH 11: What should we learn from the writings of James?.....	88
CH 12: What Must I Do To Be Saved?.....	95

III. THE LAW IS A FORESHADOWING OF THE REAL

CH 13: The Old Covenant is A Foreshadowing Of What Christ Accomplished	97
--	----

III. AFTER YOUR SALVATION

CH 14: Can A Person Lose Their Salvation?.....	127
CH 15: Dead To The Law, Alive By Grace.....	149
CH 16: Abiding In Christ, The True Vine.....	156
CH 17: You Will Have Troubles In Life.....	171
CH 18: The Holy Spirit Intercedes For Us.....	181
CH 19: Faith, Do You Have It?.....	183
CH 20: God Says Haughty Is Naughty.....	190
CH 21: The Unforgiving Servant.....	193
CH 22: The Filling Of The Spirit.....	203
CH 23: Do We Sanctify Ourselves Or Does The Holy Spirit Sanctify Us?..	220
CH 24: The Godly Sifting Of A Person.....	226
CH 25: The Importance Of Hearing God's Word.....	229
CH 26: How Should A Christian Live After Salvation?.....	233

CH 27: The Blessed Hope. The Rapture.....243
CH 28: The Bema Seat Judgment Of Believers.....250

III. ABOUT THE AUTHOR

About The Author.....254
Bibliography.....255

Section I

The Gospel Of

Jesus Christ

Chapter 1

Who Is Jesus Christ?

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.” (John 1:1 KJV)

When someone asks the question, *Who is Jesus Christ?* they usually only ask it because they may not understand why the Holy Bible is the word of the one true God. The God of the Bible gives proof that no other religious writings have that it is the true word of God and that is completely reliable; Bible prophecy fulfilled. The historical accuracy of the Bible is also very real. In fact, historians reference the Bible because it is full of historical facts. Even the school system uses Biblical history in teaching. Archaeology has been continually unveiling truths that match the Biblical accounts, too numerous to recite here. You can do research on this topic online though and you will quickly see the truth of the historic accuracy of the Bible.

After coming to the realization that the Bible is the true word of the God of the universe it becomes very evident that the entire Bible, including both the Old Testament (Torah) and the New Testament (The Gospel of Jesus Christ) all point to a central being and person; Jesus *the Christ*. The long awaited and promised Messiah that God promised from the Old Testament Scriptures.

WHAT WAS JESUS LAST NAME?

Just information for those of you who yet do not know but Jesus' last name is not 'CHRIST'. In modern times, we all have a last name and many times, a middle name, to help others identify who a person is. In Jesus day, this does not seem to be the case. Instead, throughout the New Testament we can see that people were known by their family name and sometimes by what they did as an occupation, or a certain 'pointer' to help people know who they were identifying. For example, the Apostle Peter's name before Christ renamed him Peter (the rock) was 'Simon'. Now there were many men with the name Simon. Even one of Jesus' half brothers was named Simon. So the disciple Simon Peter is referred in the Scriptures as '*Simon Bar Jonah*', which literally means '*Simon, Son of Jonah*' (John 1:42) and later Jesus renamed him '*Peter, The Rock*', identifying him clearly in Scriptures as one of the Apostles. And in Matthew 10, again we see reference to '*Simon the Zealot*'. This was the writer making it clear he was writing about someone other than Simon Bar Jonah. This Simon was a known Zealot and not a disciple.

The reference of CHRIST identified with '*Jesus, Of Nazareth*' is a term that refers to the long awaited Messiah from Old Testament prophecies. When we refer to Jesus Christ, we are really saying Jesus THE Christ, or '***Jesus , the anointed one***', or '***Jesus, the Messiah***'. The CHRIST part of Jesus Christ is a title showing readers who He is; the prophesied Messiah, the Son of the living God in human form. He is the God-Man.

JESUS' EARTHLY FAMILY

As most know the Christmas story of Jesus' birth in Bethlehem I will not go into those details at this time. We have little information about Jesus when He

was a child being raised by his Earthy parents Joseph and Mary. We do know that Jesus had 4 half brothers - James, Joseph, Simon and Judas – not to be mistaken for the disciples of the same name; these were common names in that day (Matthew 13:55). They were the children of Joseph and Mary but half brothers to Jesus in reality because Mary was conceived not from Joseph but from the Holy Spirit of God (Matthew 1:20). Jesus also had sisters but the Scriptures do not seem to tell us what their names were (Matthew 13:56).

Right after Jesus' temptation by the devil in the wilderness, where He fasted for 40 days and nights (Matthew 4:1), Jesus went to the place where He was raised, the town of Nazareth. Jesus was born in Bethlehem fulfilling many Old Testament prophecies about the Messiah's coming. But that was only because Mary and Joseph went to Bethlehem due to the census that was happening at that time. Jesus actually was brought up in Nazareth with Mary, Joseph, His brothers and His sisters. Joseph was a carpenter and so Jesus was likely taught the trade as well in His early childhood years. This is why some refer to Jesus as *the carpenter's son*.

In the book of Isaiah, in the Old Testament, is a prophecy that is about the coming of the Messiah, the Son Of God, who will save Israel and the whole world. When Jesus started His ministry, He made no small talk, nor did He keep anyone guessing about who He claimed to be. In fact, near the beginning of His ministry He stated, in a *extremely clear* and direct way, who He was. He claimed He was the prophesied Messiah to His own people, in the town He grew up in. He proclaimed it in the community Synagog, to those *in His town* that knew His family and also knew Him!

“And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet

Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

'The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.'

*And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. **And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears**" (Luke 4: 16-21 KJV)*

Unfortunately his own fellow neighbours and brethren, that he grew up alongside, did not believe he was the long awaited Messiah. They said among themselves, *"Is this not Joseph's son?" (Luke 4:22)* They must have thought to themselves, we know this guy! He is part of our community. We grew up with him. He read the Torah right here in our synagogue from his early days. He is the son of Joseph, the carpenter. That is what they were thinking and saying out loud. In those days what Jesus said was blasphemy, making one's self equal to God, and such a person was to be stoned to death. It caused quite the ruckus indeed! Jesus said to them plainly, *"Assuredly, I say to you, no prophet is accepted in his own country."*

From the beginning of His ministry, Jesus was very candid about who He was to the Jewish people; *to His own people*. Jesus then began His Earthy ministry and performed so many miracles of God that the Bible could not even contain them all. Jesus proclaimed He was the prophesied Son Of God who came to be born of the Virgin Mary, live a completely sinless life (He was God in the flesh) and took upon the sins of the world upon the cross as He became the sin of

the world. The one and final sacrifice for our sins. Jesus took upon Himself the punishment of the sins of every person that ever lived. And for anyone who accepts His pardon gift for our sin, His atonement for our sins, and believes He is the Son of God, that person is utterly saved from their sin debt against a Holy God and is heaven bound. Jesus said,

“But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.” (Matthew 9:13 KJV)

“For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.” (John 3:17-18 KJV)

JESUS CHRIST IS THE GOD-MAN

What do I mean by that? We humans are a sinful lot are we not? We do not even realize just how sinful we are until we have a good look in the mirror of the Ten Commandments. Only then do we see just how sinful we really are as a race and as individuals. We may look better if we compare ourselves to other people who do more wicked things. But when we compare ourselves with a perfect and Holy God, we truly are a wicked bunch. And there is NOTHING we can do ourselves, in our self effort, to eradicate our sin or our sinful ways. God is a perfectly just being and has openly declared that we are all sinners and that God has appointed a day of wrath, a day of your death and a judgment for your sins. The punishment for even one sin is so severe that it means an eternity separated from the love of God in a place of torment. Yet the Bible is clear that God loves us with an unconditional love; a *perfect love*. God is also perfect in mercy. So how

can God keep these attributes perfectly? He must be true to His character because the Bible tells us that God *never changes*. On one hand God must carry out a punishment for sins committed, but on the other hand He does not want to do so because He loves you so much.

This is where God's attribute of being perfect in mercy comes into play. And that is why God sent Jesus to Earth in the flesh. God decided that He would live a sinless life as a human and then take the punishment for the sins of the whole world upon Himself. He did this on the cross. God had to become flesh, that is human, while remaining God at the same time. There was no other way to save humankind from their sin debt. Jesus is the God-man that accomplished this for us.

“For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.”
(Romans 5:10 KJV)

JESUS IS THE ONLY MEDIATOR BETWEEN HUMANKIND AND GOD

Jesus Christ is the one and only mediator between God the Father and humankind (1 Timothy 2:5). He is the bridge between the sinful state of humankind (the wicked) and the righteous state required to be saved from God's wrath (the righteous). To gain a righteous state is not talking about living a perfectly sinless life. That is impossible for us in our fallen fleshly sinful nature. It is talking about our *position before God*. We only gain a righteous state before God by believing on Jesus Christ and the atonement He provided as a means for all our sins to be forgiven.

Chapter 2

Jesus Christ. The Lord Of The Old & New Testament

Why did God give us the Bible anyway? Was it just a matter of showing us right from wrong? Was it created as a guide for living as we should? Or does it go beyond that? One thing that *stunned* me in my search for the truth about God and the Bible was that the Word of God is not just words. In the book of John it reads,

"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." (John 1:1 KJV)

Notice the capital on the 'Word'. That means it is a name and seems to be telling us that God was called the "Word" *in the beginning*. Remember that the first verse of the Bible starts with *"In the beginning..."* when describing God's creation of the Heavens and the Earth. This seems to be stating that this being, 'The Word', existed before God created the heavens and the Earth and that 'The Word' was *"with God"*, and *"was God"*. Later in the book of John it becomes clearer when it states,

"And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth." (John 1:14 KJV)

The only being *with God* in eternity past who became flesh is Jesus Christ, the Messiah. As part of trinity of God (God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy

Spirit), Jesus was the Son of God who became a human being to save the world by His act of atonement on the cross. So “The Word” in John 1:1 is Jesus before He became human, in eternity past. Jesus is called “The Word” in His per-incarnate state of being. And it says *“in the beginning”* as to show us that Jesus was the part of the Trinity that created the heavens and the Earth. Jesus did not come into existence at his human birth. He existed BEFORE the creation of the universe! He was God who became flesh (human). Jesus Himself acknowledges this to be true in the Scriptures.

“For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me.” (John 5:46 KJV)

Where did Moses write about Christ? The events of the Exodus is a depiction and foreshadowing of Salvation through Christ but beyond that wasn't it God the Father that spoke with Old Testament believers? There are some verses of Scripture that indicate that this is not the case at all.

“No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.” (John 1:18 KJV)

“And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.” (John 5:37 KJV)

If this is the case, who was the Angel of the Lord in the Old Testament Scriptures? Who was the Angel of the Lord during the Exodus? Who was the God of the burning bush that Moses encountered? If you look at the Scriptures regarding the Exodus God makes it clear who He is when Moses asks God:

“And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say unto them? “ (Exodus 3:13 KJV)

Here we see Moses asking what God’s name is. And so God answers him,

“And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.” (Exodus 3: 14 KJV)

This makes it clear that the Old Testament God Head of the Trinity during the Exodus was called “I AM”. So who is the I AM of the God head? Father, Son, or Holy Spirit? Jesus Christ Himself gives us the answer in the book of John when he says,

*“...Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, **I AM.** ”
(John 8:58 KJV)*

Jesus tells us clearly that He is the “I AM” of the Old Testament! Christ was the pillar of fire by night and the pillar of clouds by day (Exodus 13:21). Jesus was the person of the Trinity of God that led the Israelites out of Egypt during the Exodus. If we look in the book of Genesis we see the story of how Sodom and Gomorrah was destroyed. The sudden appearance of three men caught the attention of Abraham as it reads,

“Then the Lord appeared to him by the terebinth trees of Mamre, as he was sitting in the tent door in the heat of the day. So he lifted his eyes and looked, and behold, three men were standing by him; and when he saw

them, he ran from the tent door to meet them, and bowed himself to the ground.” (Genesis 18:4 KJV)

We see here that these were not just three men arriving near their tent. There was something stunning about these three. In fact, Abraham knew they were not just men because as they approached closer we see Abraham *bowed to the ground*. This is why it reads *“the Lord appeared to Abraham...”* One of these three visitors was the Lord. It was Jesus Christ Himself in his preincarnate form of “The Word”. It was the part of the Trinity known as “The Son”. Many Christians believe that God the Father is the Lord Almighty in the Old Testament and Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit in the New Testament. However, the Scriptures clearly state that it was God the Son, the “Word”, in both the Old and New Testament.

“I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not. ” (Jude 1:5 KJV)

Of course, this is in the literal sense. Because we know that the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit are all God almighty together, one God and each are completely equal. So it was really all three persons of God in that sense. But it is also clear in Scripture that each part of the Trinity does take on specific tasks. After all, God the Father and the Holy Spirit did not become flesh and die on the cross, Jesus Christ, the Son (the Word) did that. And when the Holy Spirit came upon the apostles in the upper room, it was clearly the Holy Spirit sent for that occasion. And Jesus said He would send the helper and comforter (Holy Spirit) to dwell in us starting at Pentecost. And for those wondering about the other two individuals in the Sodom and Gomorrah story; the other two appear to be Angels. Angels often

appear as men on Earth as we see throughout the Bible. In the book of Hebrews it reads,

“Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.” (Hebrews 13:1-2 KJV)

We often think from the human point of view until God shows us the truth in the Word of God, the Holy Bible, and then our eyes start opening to the reality and truth. The entire Bible, both New Testament and Old Testament are all focused on ONE CENTRAL BEING and He is Jesus The Christ, the anointed Savior of the world. He created all that we see in the Heavens (space) and on the Earth. It is He that died on the cross to atone for OUR sins. This is an amazing truth that our creator would lower Himself to a human level and take such a punishment to save us from His own Holy wrath.

Chapter 3

The Unrepentant And The Wicked

*“The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good. God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.”
(Psalm 53:1-3 KJV)*

This is the state of all humankind from our physical birth, until one accepts the gift of the atonement for our sins through Jesus Christ, the Son of God. There are two types of humans:

1. **The Redeemed** (also known as The Righteous, *The Saved*, *The Forgiven*) and
2. **The Unredeemed** (also known as The Wicked, *The Lost*, *The Unsaved*, *The Unforgiven*')

Many who pick up a Bible and read it see the word *righteous* and think it is all about a person that does good. And that *The Wicked* is a person that does evil. While a person who is a Christian may perform good works this is not what these two words mean. It is not what a person does (*good works vs evil works*) that determines which group you are a member of. These two words, *righteous* and *wicked*, are talking about a person positionally in regards to eternity.

You are in one of two camps; those who call Jesus Lord or those that deny Christ. Those that deny Christ are referred to as *The Wicked*, *The Unrepentant* and *Those That Are Perishing* in the Bible. ALL have sinned and are born into this world with the sinful flesh. All belong to the group called *The Unrepentant* and *The Wicked*. This passage tells us that , '*There is none that do good.*' So doing good works will not allow a person to become part of what the Bible describes as *The Righteous* group of people who are heaven bound.

WHO ARE THE REDEEMED / RIGHTEOUS / SAVED?

*"Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of DEBT. But to him that worketh not, but **BELIEVETH ON HIM** that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness." (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)*

To be translated from the camp of the unredeemed and wicked into the camp of the righteous is not something our works can accomplish. It is through *faith alone*. That is, doing good works is not how a person can become righteous. Jesus said we are all imprisoned and slaves to the sinful flesh we struggle against. There is NOTHING a person can do themselves to erase the sins they have committed. In fact, it is God who provided a way for us to be part of the group called *The Righteous*.

Those the Bible calls *The Righteous* and *The Redeemed* are those individuals who believe that Jesus is the Son Of The Living God. The third part of the Triune God (The Father, The Son and the Holy Spirit). Jesus was born of the Virgin Mary and was not born in sin as humankind has been since Adam and Eve fell in the garden of Eden. Jesus lived a sinless life and was God in human form; Jesus is fully God and fully man. Ultimately, Jesus (God in human form) took the punishment for the sin of the world on the cross and all who accept His free gift of

salvation are forgiven their sins because Jesus took the punishment for the sins we have, or will ever commit.

*“For by **GRACE** are ye saved **THROUGH FAITH**; and that **NOT of yourselves**: it is the **GIFT of God: NOT OF WORKS**, lest any man should boast.”
(Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)”*

These are called the *The Righteous* in the Bible. It is not being righteous through good works but is the free gift from God for all who accept Christ as the Lord of their life. It is not that Christians are any better, or more 'good' than unbelievers. We ALL are sinners – even after accepting Christ! John writing to believers in Christ clearly states that, *“If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”* (1 John 1:10 KJV)

If you are a believer and are a *Christian* and you think you are good and others are evil. That you are somehow better than an unrepentant person then you REALLY need to re-evaluate what you think it means to be a Christian! You are giving real Christians a very bad reputation indeed. Do not leave out the *“lest any man should boast”* part of the Ephesians 2 Scripture. I write this because we see this happening too much today. And the lost see it and dismiss the truth of Christ because of it! You misrepresent Jesus by doing this.

Believers, Please STOP.

Change the way you think about others.

Do not be a boaster as if you did anything good to gain salvation.

The devil is working through you if you do this. If you are shocked by me saying this you need to know that even the Apostle Peter had the devil speak through him (Matthew 16:23). We are all sinners – that is a fact! Only God can save us from our sins and the resulting everlasting punishment.

SOME WOULD SAY, “I BELIEVE IN GOD”. THAT IS ENOUGH.

*“...Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, **and tremble.**” (James 2:19 KJV)*

To believe there is a God is NOT ENOUGH. Not all who believe in God will end up in Heaven. So there is a distinction between the redeemed and the lost. So which camp of people are you currently a part of? To answer that you need to see the truth of the Bible in how it describes the wicked unredeemed lost person.

WHAT THE BIBLE SAYS ABOUT THE LOST (THE WICKED)

“This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.” (Ephesians 4:17-19 KJV)

The Lost, of which we all were a part of prior to our moment of belief in Christ, have a futile mind, having their understanding of God's truth darkened. The more they rebel against God; the more alienated they become from God. The more they reject God; the more blinded they become in their heart – their very inner being. Once a person rejects Christ and the Gospel they remain *'in sin'*,

controlled by the ruler of this world who is currently Satan. They are on a downward spiral moving away from God and they eventually become uncaring and care only for themselves as they do not believe there is a God. Like that saying goes, *It's every man for himself.*

THE UNREDEEMED – THE WICKED

Here is a passage in Scripture that describes an *Unredeemed, Wicked* person. And remember this means all of us prior to accepting Christ.

“A naughty person, a wicked man, walketh with a froward mouth. He winketh with his eyes, he speaketh with his feet, he teacheth with his fingers; Frowardness is in his heart, he deviseth mischief continually; he soweth discord. Therefore shall his calamity come suddenly; suddenly shall he be broken without remedy. These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him:

A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood,

An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief,

A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren.” (Proverbs 6:12-19 KJV)

A proud look, a lying tongue. Sound like anyone we know? This describes Satan to a tee. He deceived Adam and Eve and continues doing so to all the world today. We see here the wicked give *false witness*. Do you know those who continually see the worst in everyone? Those who gossip behind your back to make others hate you? They wink at you, smile and shake your hand under a false pretense. They seem good to your face but they stab you in the back when you

are not looking. Those that act as if they are the most important? Show offs? Boasters in themselves? Those that put down another so that they will look good themselves. Do you know anyone like that?

I know you do! *Don't you?* The question is why? The answer given in the Bible is because humankind has a *sinful flesh* and a *sinful fleshly mind* and it is the nature of Satan – not God. And we all have this **Sin Nature** side within us. Even the redeemed still have the fleshly mind fighting with our newly created Spirit of God. And if I am honest, many professing Christians act like this too and have turned others away from Christ in doing so.

THE WICKED ARE ALREADY CONDEMNED

The Bible calls the wicked *The Condemned*, even before physical death.

“For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

*He that believeth on him **is not condemned**: but **he that believeth not is condemned already**, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.” (John 3: 16-19 KJV)*

“He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned.” (Mark 16:16)

THE WORLD IS BEING GREATLY DECEIVED

The wicked are deceived and do not believe on the one thing God wants for each of us; to have all the penalty for our sins wiped out through the sacrificial death of Jesus the Christ on that cross. To have all our sin debt paid so we do not have to receive the punishment for our sins which is eternal death – separated from the love of our Father God forever. The name Satan means '*Adversary*'. He is the enemy of humankind. He is an Angel that was once closest to throne of God Almighty in Heaven and his name was Lucifer. Until he wanted to be like God and through Pride he fell and became the evil one and our adversary, Satan. He deceived 1/3 of the angels of heaven to rebel against God. Today Satan and his fallen angels are the ones ruling the world as we know it behind the scenes.

However, it is important to remember that Satan is not like God. He is not all knowing and he cannot be everywhere at one time. He is an angel, a created being and he uses his fallen angels to rule this world. Today's culture has been orchestrated by Satan and he is very good at how he is deceiving us and keeping us all too busy to learn the truth of the Gospel because he knows time is now very short because Christ is coming again soon for His redeemed.

WHAT WE ARE TODAY, IN ONE WORD

If there was a word to describe our current state of being today it is the word **BUSY**. There is hardly time to eat and sleep these days. Pursuit of *the good life* and wealth is the pinnacle of success. So many of youth's role models are doing evil things that just 50 years ago would be appalling and something done in secret and hidden from others knowing how evil they are. These same things are being done in the open and are being portrayed as *good and acceptable* things today. In Isaiah it reads,

“Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! Woe unto them that are mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him! (Isaiah 5:20-23 KJV)

Even many of our entertainment media stars and politicians are acting like this blatantly. The time we now live in, during the end of the Church age, is filled with these kinds of things. And they are things called WICKED by God. He will not let it continue forever.

MOBILE COMMUNICATION TECHNOLOGY

The explosion of mobile devices and texting is having a huge negative impact on our youth that is only now coming to light. As parents, we never seen it coming! We thought it was a great way to communicate with our children at school and when they are out and about. We thought, This will be great! But is it really?

When I was young, there were times when I did nothing but just watch Television or go outside and ride my bike alone. You know.. alone time. Quiet time! A chance to regenerate the batteries. The attention spans of our youth (and our adults too!) today are very small and it is becoming an epidemic. They need to be *doing something* every second of the day. Mobile devices are glued to their hands. Many will not speak on the phone to friends and they only text. This technology is pushing people away from each other and it seems the kids believe much of what they see on their mobile devices, taking it as truth without investigation or proof. It is so bad that even on school buses, it is prevalent. Texting each other when they

are only 4 feet from each other is a common occurrence. (I know.. I have driven a school bus).

People are dying in cars driven by those texting while driving. Even if they are just going 5 minutes to the store – they are on the mobile devices and not paying close enough attention to the road. People are walking across streets on their mobile phones and getting hit by cars, or falling in construction holes because they are not watching. It is crazy – and it is REAL.

ZOMBIES OF THE MEDIA

Through mass media and mobile technology those in power are duping the world and deceiving them about what is truly happening. The New World Order and the world leaders are pushing this on society. The One World Religion is being promoted as well with such evil movements like the *Chrislam Movement*, seeking to combine Christianity and Islam together as one religion. God forbid as each does not have the same Jesus as the Son of God. Islam teaches Jesus is merely a prophet and takes away Salvation apart from works!

Keep being busy at all times with irrelevant topics of the entertainment world. Believe that evil things are good things and good things are evil. These are the messages being conveyed. We are being blasted with these ideas as being good things. But according to Bible Prophecy it is the beginning of the end for this world system as the Antichrist will be ruling this New World Order and using all this technology in ways Adolf Hitler would have envied having in order to control the people of the world. SATAN IS KEEPING US ALL VERY BUSY INDEED!

JUDGMENT DAY IS COMING

The Day Of The Lord (known as the Tribulation Period) will soon be upon this entire world where God will judge *The Unrepentant*. Those left behind at the Rapture are those that simply will not believe in salvation through Christ. So many people today say and believe that, '*we have everything we need. We do not need God*'. The Rapture and ultimately the Great and Terrible Day of The Lord will change those ideas! It is God's last attempt to have *The Unredeemed* to come to an end of themselves so that as many people as possible turn to Christ for salvation.

"But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them" (2 Corinthians 4:3-4 KJV)

The *god of this age* is Satan. He is blinding the people of the world to the truth of the Gospel. Bible Prophecy points to an end time deception of such enormity that even the elect of God may believe the lie. The world is deceived greatly. Such lies about God abound only because people are not seeking the truth. If people would SLOW DOWN and seek the truth...they would find how truthful and reliable the word of God (the Bible) is and the blinders would come off and they would truly start knowing the TRUE heart of God towards us and accept God's only method to pardon our sin; the salvation only provided by Jesus the Christ.

DO NOT BE DECEIVED ANY LONGER!

Those who reject Christ are greatly deceived and will end up in everlasting punishment just like Satan and his fallen angels. It is a lack of the knowledge of the Gospel truth that is condemning The Wicked.

*“And the devil **that deceived them** was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.” (Revelation 20:10 KJV)*

*“Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, **prepared for the devil and his angels:**” (Matthew 25:41 KJV)*

The Bible tells us that hell was created for Satan and his fallen angles – not for humankind! But if you side with Satan, you will follow where he will end up.

This is NOT God's desire for you!

JESUS CHRIST IS RETURNING

Jesus Christ is going to return and Bible Prophecy shows that this event will happen sooner than many think. The last 2000 Bible Prophecies were 100% fulfilled. The 500 or so about the Second Coming of Christ in the End Times will also be fulfilled 100%. In fact, quite a few are already fulfilled and being fulfilled right now in our modern times. So many that it would fill an entire book itself to discuss.

Many today are scoffers and are saying *“Where is His return? Things are the same as they always have been”*. But what they do not realize is they are fulfilling end time Bible Prophecy (2 Peter 3:3-4) by doing so. The real reason the Messiah,

Jesus Christ, has not yet returned in the last 2000 years is because *“The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.”* (2 Peter 3:9 KJV)

TRUST IN THE LORD JESUS OR TRUST IN OTHER MEN?

*“Thus saith the Lord; **Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord.** For he shall be like the heath in the desert, and shall not see when good cometh; but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, in a salt land and not inhabited. **Blessed is the man that trusteth in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is.** For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and that spreadeth out her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat cometh, but her leaf shall be green; and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit.*

*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? **I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.”** (Jeremiah 17:5-10 KJV)*

DO NOT REFUSE TO KNOW JESUS!

God's greatest desire is that you know Him. Not just know He exists but to have a relationship as a Father to a son or daughter. For the yet unredeemed wicked, *“... Thine habitation is in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know me, saith the Lord.”* (Jeremiah 9:6 KJV)

God says to the wicked of the world,

*“Thus saith the Lord, Let not the wise man glory **in his wisdom**, neither let the mighty man glory in **his might**, let not the rich man glory in **his riches**: **But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the Lord which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord.**”
(Jeremiah 9:23-24 KJV)*

ARE YOU ONE OF THE WICKED PEOPLE?

What about you? Are you a Biblical Christian? Or do you just think you are because you attend church? Or because you are a good person? Are you heaven bound or bound for everlasting punishment for your sins against a Holy God?

Base your knowledge ON THE BIBLE and what it says – not just assuming that because another person reads they should know. Check if what your pastor and Christian religion is teaching *is actually Biblical*.

Am I saying that all religious groups and denominations and Christian churches are teaching falsely? NO, I am not! However, there are many (if not a majority) that are coveting and watering down the true Gospel for a false gospel, just to keep church membership and control and coveting for money. We must look and read the Bible to see the truth. Only the Word of God is true. Do not even take what I teach for granted, as truth. ***Read the Bible and see for yourself.***

Chapter 4

Are You A Good Person? Are You Sure?

If you were to ask 20 random people this question you would likely get 20 answers with “*Yes, I think I am a pretty good person.*” The question is compared to what or better yet *to whom?* So what about you? Do you consider yourself to be a good person? Do you believe you are a better person than others who do wicked things? And that God will not judge you because you do more good than bad?

Is it a fair assessment to compare our goodness to the relative badness of others as if we are guiltless? Do we each have our own level of what we feel is good or bad? Do each of us have our own truth or is there an absolute truth that we should be comparing ourselves with?

What would be the absolute truth though? It cannot be truth that we have created for ourselves because that would not be a fair assessment to base our goodness or badness with. There must be an absolute truth about goodness and badness. Good and evil. Being a good person and being an evil person.

God gave us this standard in the Ten Commandments. It is the absolute truth. God is perfectly Holy and Just. And He gave us an absolute truth that we can use to test whether we are good or evil. This absolute truth is called the *Law of Moses (the Law)*, what we call today, the *Ten Commandments*. We must use God’s standard for this test. Not human standards. Comparing ourselves to other people is not a valid test. We must compare ourselves to God Himself because as the creator of all there is no other standard that would be fair to use.

THE LIFE OR DEATH TEST

Let's take an honest test to find out if you and I are good people. And this test is ABSOLUTE. That means, it is not graded on a scale of percentages. God is PERFECTLY HOLY and a 99.9999% is not a pass. In fact, if you fail on just one point, you have utterly failed the entire test. Just Be honest with yourself. Ok let's go...

1. Have you EVER lied before?

Well.. be honest have you? Yes? Then what does that make you? It makes you a liar right? By telling a lie to another you have broken the ninth commandment of God.

2. Have you ever committed adultery?

And remember that Christ said that those that even look at another with lust has committed adultery in their hearts, even though the physical act was never committed. (Matthew 5:27-28) So again, have you ever committed adultery in this light? Well, be honest. Yes? Then what does that make you? It makes you an adulterer right? By doing so you have broken the seventh commandment of God.

3. Have you ever stolen anything?

Have you found money and kept it? Have you taken something that belongs to another and never returned it? Have you taken stationary item from work for personal use? If so, what does that make you? It makes you a thief right?

4. Have you ever used the Lord's name in vain?

Did you ever hurt yourself and screamed out "God!" or "Jesus Christ!" ? Did you ever use God's name as a cuss word? If so, you have broken the third commandment of God.

5. Have you ever looked at things that others have and wished you had them?

Do you see someone with a nice car and wish you had that? Did you ever see someone's house and thought I wish I had that? If so, you have broken the tenth commandment of God.

Okay, lets pause the test at this point. I have only asked you five questions. Don't you feel like it is pointless to go on? I mean if you fail on just one point you have already failed the test of being a good person based on God's perfect and absolute standard of Holiness.

NEWS FLASH! WE ALL FAIL THIS TEST!

I could go on and on with this self test but it is enough with just the 5 questions above to show you that you have broken at least ONE of the ten commandments of God. (Truthfully, most!) Now, here is a scriptural truth that will make this an even worse situation and it shows clearly that failing one point makes you a complete failure in being '*a good person*':

*"For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and **yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.** For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law." (James 2:10-11 KJV)*

So if you have lied you are guilty of *breaking a law of God*. And because God is so Holy He MUST punish you for your sins. You are a person bound for the Wrath of a Holy God and headed for punishment for your sins.

Paul tells us in Romans that,

*"...ALL have sinned, and **come short** of the glory of God; " (Romans 8:23 KJV)*

*"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: **for by the law is the knowledge of sin.**" (Romans 3:20 KJV)*

This I am afraid is the state of **every** human being. Everyday is just more sins being added onto our record and one day we will find ourselves in the court room of God Almighty who is perfectly JUST and we will be sentenced. God is perfectly Holy and perfectly JUST. He MUST punish sin. And what is the penalty for sin? It is VERY severe! In fact it is called the Second death, an eternal separation from the love of God in a place the Bible calls the lake of fire. A placement of severe punishment.

*"For **the wages of sin is death**; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. " (Romans 6:23 KJV)*

The word *death* in this passage of Scripture is not talking about a physical death only. It is talking of a *spiritual death* as well because if we look at the original Greek the word for death here is *hánatos* which is derived from the word *thnḗskō*, (to die) – physical or spiritual *death and* figuratively separation from the life (salvation) of God forever by dying without first experiencing *death to self* to receive His gift of salvation.

But wait! Isn't God perfectly loving as well? Does not the Bible say that God is perfect in His mercy and love? Well YES! But not in a wishy washy way like we humans may think. God must be true to His own Holiness. God NEVER changes and is perfectly Holy AND perfectly just. He loves us yet He must also judge sin and He is so Holy that just one sin and we are doomed to eternal death in a place called hell. (Romans 6:23)

That is, if you think that God will just give you a pass without punishment you are wrong. He must be perfectly just. You will NEVER hear God say, "*Oh you have less sins than this other person and you did mostly good deeds so you can enter heaven for all eternity and live forever.*" **NEVER.** Yes, God is full of love and mercy but He must punish our sin because He is also perfectly just. He will not and CANNOT go against His own perfect character.

When you realize how severe sin is and realize that you stand before God guilty, what do you think will happen when you die? Are you going to be standing at the judgment throne of the Lord God and just tell Him what a *good person* you are? Or are you headed for hell prepared for the devil and his angels?

KNOW THIS: EVERYONE HAS AN APPOINTMENT WITH GOD

Each of us has an appointment with our eternal destiny. You can *decide* to meet with Him at this appointment *as a sinner* to be judged to eternal death or *as a son or daughter* to be accepted into God's house, a place called The New

Jerusalem and Heaven, for life everlasting. The Apostle Paul makes this clear when he writes:

*“And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where **to repent**: Because he hath **appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained (Jesus)**; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.” (Acts 17: 30-31 KJV, brackets by me)*

And do not believe that we are reincarnated at death to come back according to our deeds and that we keep coming back until we are sinless. Look around you, has that happened to anyone yet after 6000 years? Hebrews makes it very clear that *“And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment,” (Hebrews 9:27)*

And there is no such thing as purgatory! That is a man made ideal and NOT Biblical. The Bible is very clear.... 1st death, 2nd judgment. — no second chances after death! A place called purgatory is not found anywhere in Scripture. It is a complete fable created by man – not by God.

At our appointed time of death we will give an account to God for our lives and what we did here on Earth!

“For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.” (Romans 14:11-12 KJV)

Doesn't that worry you? If not, it should. God is perfectly loving, yes that is true. But God is also perfectly just and Holy. God has a Holy hatred for sin. (Isaiah 59:2) And what are we humans doing? **Sinning!** What are we all called? **Sinners!** *That is not a good at all for us is it?*

It is established that according to God's Word, all of us are sinners. Even when we think we are *good*. And we cannot make up for our sins with good deeds. If you think that good deeds can save you from the Wrath of God and judgment of God for your sin, you are very wrong. The Bible says, *"There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death."* (Proverbs 14:12)

*"For the wages of sin is death, **but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.**" (Romans 6:23 KJV)*

Thus far I have discussed the first part of Romans 6:23 and that where we are headed is physical AND spiritual eternal death and separation from God in a place called hell. That is very bad news for anyone that does not continue in Romans 6:23 to the second part to see how we can escape this eternal punishment for our sins. And what is the solution to not ending up in this situation? *"...**BUT** the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."* (Romans 6:23)

One very important word in that Scripture is the word but. As a sinner we are bound for an eternal death where the unbeliever and unsaved (called the wicked) will be resurrected at the last day; the second resurrection. Their name will not be found in the book of life because they never accepted Christ as Saviour from their sins. Such a person will then be cast into the lake of fire where they will perish. BUT there is a way for a person to escape such a judgment. God made a way for us to escape His own wrath and judgment. God is perfectly Holy and Just so the penalty for our sin must be paid... Death forever and separation from God. But He loves us so much that He sent His Only Begotten Son to suffer the penalty in our place so that we could be forgiven and saved from His own Holy Wrath and judgment.

*“For HE HATH MADE Him (Jesus) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be MADE the righteousness of God **in Him.**” (2 Corinthians 5:21 KJV)*

*“For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever **believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**” (John 3:16 KJV)*

We see here again that the wicked and unsaved will perish. Without accepting the forgiveness provided through Christ's atonement for our sins, our sin would remain and the wages of sin is an eternal death.

*“Jesus answered, “Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, **he cannot enter the kingdom of God.** That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Do not marvel that I said to you, ‘**You must be born again.**’ The wind blows where it wishes, and you hear the sound of it, but cannot tell where it comes from and where it goes. So is everyone who is born of the Spirit.” Nicodemus answered and said to Him, “How can these things be?”*

*Jesus answered and said to him, “Are you the teacher of Israel, and do not know these things? Most assuredly, I say to you, We speak what We know and testify what We have seen, and you do not receive Our witness. If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how will you believe if I tell you heavenly things? No one has ascended to heaven but He who came down from heaven, that is, the Son of Man who is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up, **that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have eternal life.***

*For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, **that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.** For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world **through Him might be saved.***

***He who believes in Him is not condemned;** but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.*

And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone practising evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed.

But he who does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be clearly seen, that they have been done in God.” (John 3:5-21 NKJV)

Being born again is called being baptized by the Holy Spirit. The work of salvation is already completed by Christ when he said on the cross, *“It is finished.”* He paid our penalty for our sins. But God will not force anyone to love Him or want to know Him. He did not create us as robots. He gives us a choice. Believe and be with Him forever in heaven or remain as you are a sinner unto the final judgment. Come to the judgment throne with your own *self righteousness in pride*, or come *humble having asked Christ to save you*. What more can God do? How much more can He demonstrate His love for us?

How patient is our God?! While we were His enemy and full of sin against God..it is then He became human as Jesus Christ and suffered and died for us and took upon Himself our deserved punishment for our sins. Jesus NEVER sinned and was perfectly just in the eyes of God the Father (2 Corinthians 5:21). So you see, God has met His own perfectness and Holiness. He is perfectly JUST because the punishment for our sins **was carried out** (on Jesus), yet His perfect love and

mercy *was also carried out* by providing us a way to gain salvation from our sinful nature (by asking for forgiveness through Jesus' act of atonement).

"... But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: " (John 1:12 KJV)

"Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. " (Revelation 3:20 KJV)

Ask Jesus to forgive you of your sins and accept His free gift of Salvation and invite the Holy Spirit into your life. Ask the Holy Spirit to indwell in you and help you learn all truth. Avoid sinning as much as possible (after all sin has bad consequences) and understand that it is not *turning from your sin* that will save you. It is fully the work of Christ without your efforts or works. All your sins (past/present /future) are forgiven 100% because Christ paid your penalty already. However, after Salvation we are to try our best to not sin and we should turn from our sinful ways and abide in Christ, and abide in His Words, walking by the spirit and not the flesh. Read your Bible! Read Jesus' own words! It is God's love book for you! Jesus paid a HIGH PRICE for your redemption, honor it by getting to know God and the truth and depth of the Gospel.

CHOOSE LIFE!

Know the truth that you are a sinner. You have broken God's commandments. You stand judged at death. Thank God for allowing His Son, Jesus Christ, to come down to Earth as a human through a virgin birth. Believe that Jesus never sinned and yet He gave His life as a ransom for your life. Thank

God that Jesus came and stands as your defender against God's own wrath against the sins you have committed.

Thank Jesus that He stands up for you and says to the Father; *"I have died and taken the punishment for this person's sins. The sin debt has been paid in full. Accept Him and see this person's sin no more. (Hebrews 10:17). Give to this person my own righteousness before God. (2 Corinthians 5:21).* Jesus, forgive me of my sins and in your mercy grant me eternal life.

If you truly repented of your sins (that is *changed your mind* about your sins and accepted Christ) and you asked Jesus to forgive you your sins and asked Him to come into your life as your personal Savior, then you have become what the Bible calls *'born again'*. And the following scriptures apply to you personally:

*"Therefore if any man be in Christ, **he is a new creature**: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. " (2 Corinthians 5:17 KJV)*

"... But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: " (John 1:12 KJV)

"...and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen " (Matthew 28:20 KJV)

Chapter 5

Is Salvation By Works or Faith?

ARE YOU A CHRISTIAN? ARE YOU SURE?

- Going to church does NOT make you a Christian.
- Doing good works and being good to others alone does NOT make you a Christian.
- Being a “good person” does NOT make you a Christian.
- Being born into a family of a certain denomination does NOT make you a Christian.
- Being baptized as a baby does NOT make you a Christian.
- Talking in tongues does NOT make you a Christian.
- Following sacraments does NOT make you a Christian.
- Asking a priest to absolve your sins does not make you a Christian.
- Doing penance does not make you a Christian.

There is NOTHING we can do to become a Christian except one; repent (change your mind about your sin) and *believe* the Gospel (that Jesus was the Son of God who came and took upon Himself the punishment we deserve for our sins).

God has paid the penalty for our sins. But have you accepted His forgiveness? Do you believe that Salvation through Christ is a FREE gift to you and me. An undeserved and unmerited favour from God to you!

*“For by **GRACE** are ye saved **THOROUGH FAITH**; and that **NOT** of yourselves: it is the **GIFT of God: NOT OF WORKS**, lest any man should **BOAST.**” (Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)*

NEVER BOAST OF YOUR GOODNESS OR GOOD WORKS

Will your good works save you? No.. *they never will.* That is why Jesus came to redeem us from Gods wrath against the rebellious and sinful human race. Do you need to confess your sins to a priest or pastor to be forgiven sins? No. In fact, the Bible is clear that you should ask for forgiveness of sins only to one being...

*“For there is **ONE God**, and **ONE mediator between God and men**, the man **Christ Jesus**; Who gave himself **a ransom for all**, to be testified in due time. (1 Timothy 2: 5-6 KJV)*

The Apostle Paul is clear on this point! His teachings make up two thirds of the New Testament and it is through Paul God reveals the plan of salvation of grace through faith – not works. Salvation is NOT OF WORKS. PERIOD.

*“Now to him that worketh is the reward **not reckoned of grace, but of debt.** but to him that **worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly**, his faith is counted for **righteousness.**” (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)*

ANY ORGANIZATION OR CHURCH TEACHING WORKS FOR SALVATION IS TEACHING A FALSE GOSPEL

It is so clear. Yet this is MADE unclear by the teaching of many modern day religion church organizations and denominations. The thing is when one reads the Scriptures, (start in Romans and Galatians) it is *very clear* that what is currently being taught in many pulpits is NOT what the Bible teaches about the number one purpose for Jesus coming and suffering on that cross; our penalty of the sins we commit and the sinful flesh we struggle against – **PAID IN FULL**.

Jesus BECAME SIN on that cross and suffered physically and spiritually. The Bible is clear that our sins during our life were nailed on that cross with Him and we are 100% forgiven all our sins. It is not we who accomplish our salvation by works.. **it is 100% the work of Christ who redeemed us**. Salvation is 100% grace through faith and not of works. Believing any other way is *a false Gospel*.

*“Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: **for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.***

But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.

For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is DEAD IN VAIN.” (Galatians 2:16-21 KJV)

The real problem here is not with Church going Christians. Many who attend various denominational churches do not believe the faith plus works equals salvation equation. Why? Because they read the Bible and it is very clear how wrong it is. It is a false Gospel which I have come to realize myself. But the problem is that the large majority of church members are not reading the Bible to see for themselves if what is being preached is actually Biblical. More times than not, what is being taught about the Gospel is NOT TRUE to what the Bible teaches. Because most are not reading the Bible, there are no checks and balances happening with what is being taught.

In Galatians, we can see how serious an issue this is. The Galatian church had some who infiltrated and told members that works were also required for salvation. They basically were saying that it is faith PLUS WORKS that saves a person. It amazed Paul how quickly the devil can deceive even believers. And what did Paul, the teacher of the true Gospel of Christ, have to say about this?

*“I marvel that **ye are so soon removed from him** (Jesus) that called you into the grace of Christ **unto another gospel**: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would **pervert the gospel of Christ**. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, **let him be accursed.**”
(Galatians 2:6-8 KJV)*

You can see how serious this issue is. This is such an important issue because if you believe that works are a requirement for salvation, it is no different than trying to save yourself through your own efforts – which is basically following

the Law and the Bible calls this “*the ministry of death*” and the “*ministry of condemnation*”.

*“But if the **ministration of death, written and engraven in stones**, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; **which glory was to be done away**: How shall not the **ministration of the spirit** be rather glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, **much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.**” (2 Corinthians 3:7-9 KJV)*

Do NOT continue in the Ministry of death, trying to keep the Ten Commandments for your salvation as if you could actually do so with your bent of sinful flesh. Impossible! Do not think you are a “good person” or that you are better than anyone else regarding your sin. Do not use a human standard to compare yourself with “other evil sinners” while you think you are good using human standards. Human standards regarding your sin are MEANINGLESS. God is perfectly HOLY and JUST.

It is against God’s own character of perfect Holiness that you should be comparing yourself with – and believe me WE ALL FAIL MISERABLY! We are all SINNERS. We have a sinful flesh we struggle against within us and it is impossible to never sin – even after you become a Christian! And of course to make things worse there are those who believe in a works based salvation and believe they are better than others when the fact is they are completely *wretched within*.

Such people are no different than the Pharisees of Jesus time on Earth and He described them with strong words such as *Vipers* and *Hypocrites*. They wore fancy long robes and pointed their noses down at others as if they were 'good' while others were 'bad sinners'. They used condemnation to fill their pockets while coveting. They made themselves look good outwardly, yet their hearts were full of evil.

*“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, **but within they are full of extortion and excess.** Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.*

*Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed **appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness.** Even so ye also **outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.***

*Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, **that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.** Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.*

Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

*Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and some of them **ye shall kill and crucify;** and **some of them shall ye scourge** in your synagogues, and **persecute them** from city to city:*

That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

*Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, **thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee,** how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, **and ye would not!***

Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

*For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, **till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.***" (Matthew 23:25-39 KJV)

Even today the people of the Jewish faith are still waiting for the Messiah to come. They did not recognize Jesus as the Messiah. In fact, they rejected Him, accused Him falsely and hung Him on a cross as was foretold in the Torah (Old Testament). In the last verse, verse 39, Jesus is giving a prophecy for the Jewish peoples living in our time, the Last Days when after the Rapture God will raise up 144,000 Jewish people to preach the Gospel. In the end they will weep seeing that Jesus really was the Messiah and that they persecuted and killed Him. They will be saying, "*Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.*"

Do not be like that. Do not try to make yourself look 'good' outwardly and hide your sinful nature. Do not think you are any more good than anyone else. From God's view, the very best we can offer is *as filthy rags!*

*"But **we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags;** and we all do fade as a leaf; and **our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.**" (Isaiah 64:6 KJV)*

Instead the right thing to do is acknowledge that you have a sinful flesh we struggle against. That God knows your heart and your sinful deeds. And without pride, humble yourself before God and cry out to Him for mercy and Salvation through the blood atonement of Christ on the cross for the remission of all your sins (past/present/future sins). Do not do good works as a way to gain God's acceptance and forgiveness. It will not work at all! Understand that Salvation is NOT of works, nor by keeping the Law (Ten Commandments).

The Apostle Paul said, "*Knowing that a man **is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ,***

that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.” (Galatians 2:16 KJV)

Paul makes this very clear. The LAW SAVES NO ONE! Trying to fulfill the law yourself is impossible! The Law shows us how terribly guilty of sin we are before our Holy God. The Ten Commandments are like a mirror so we can see how terribly sinful we actually are.

“The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.” (1 Corinthians 15:56 KJV)

We must rely on the FINISHED work of Christ on the cross. Double jeopardy rule applies here folks. At the point of belief and salvation you are made a new creation in the spirit. You cannot be punished for that which Christ already took upon Himself as punish FOR YOU. In Romans 4 we see how true this is when Paul writes,

“Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)

To be saved you must rely 100% on Salvation by faith in Christ's act of atonement, **apart from works**, to be saved. Otherwise, you may be lying to yourself, thinking you are saved when you are actually NOT! That is a scary position to be in and it is exactly where the devil wants you! Thinking you are saved by your works because you were taught so in church, yet headed for condemnation and judgment. This is NOT where you want to be friends! So many pastors and preachers and priests and TV Evangelists are teaching the *Faith PLUS WORKS* false Gospel. This is rampant false teaching in these end times. In fact, it is

a prophecy fulfilled in our time that points to the soon return of the Lord Jesus Christ. Jesus came to FREE you from your prison of sin! Jesus came NOT TO CONDEMN but to SAVE YOU and FREE YOU!

“That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.” (John 3:15-18 KJV)

Let your guilt turn you towards God in mercy. Ask for His forgiveness of your sins. Acknowledge that you cannot be 'good' and 'sinless' and that you are not better than any other regarding you sin and He will save you and free you and you will BE the very righteousness of God, IN CHRIST (2 Corinthians 5:21). This is called living in the spirit with the Holy Spirit living within you, teaching you, guiding you and working through you. It is not following the law to save you, *the ministry of death*. No it is *the ministry of liberty* through Christ!

*“Now the Lord is that Spirit: **and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.** But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.” (2 Corinthians 3:17-18 KJV)*

IS YOUR CHURCH TEACHING A FALSE GOSPEL?

Bible Prophecy is clear that in the Last Days (the time in which we live) there will be a falling away from the true Gospel. False Gospel religions will arise before Christ returns. I ask you this, Is it here? Yes, it is! I say this to all people in any formal denominational Christian religion... has your religion been teaching a False gospel? You can know by a some observations:

1. Does it teach faith PLUS works equals salvation?
2. Does it omit teaching Bible Prophecy which is two thirds of all Scripture? (If you did not know this, it is a big sign!)
3. Does it teach that the Ten Commandments and fulfilling them in your life is what saves you?
4. Is it legalistic, you must not do this, you must not do that, you must do this or that or lose your salvation.
5. Does it promote worship to idols? That is anything or any person that is not GOD HIMSELF?
6. Does it teach you must speak in tongues if you are truly saved?
7. Does it teach being laid out in the spirit with people contorting and scrambling about? (only place we see this in the Bible is with demon possession!)

!! If any of these apply !!

I say to you, that organization is teaching a False gospel.

READ YOUR BIBLE and make sure what is taught in the pulpit is what is taught in the Bible! THEN you will know the truth and never again be deceived by any group or person. Let every man be a liar and GOD be TRUE. Will some, or many even, take offence to me saying this? Yes. The true Gospel of Jesus Christ is offensive to many. But as Paul said,

"...I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

*For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, **The just shall live by faith.***

For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness;

Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them." (Romans 1:16-19 KJV)

Know this; it is what the word of God teaches, used in proper context. If you do not believe me, then start reading the Bible and find out what I found out. Do not just rely on what a priest or pastor tells you, or even what I am writing in this e-book, thinking *"he must know, he reads the Bible."* **NO! Start reading the Bible yourself.** Know why you believe what you believe and adjust your belief to what the Bible actually says. Renew your mind by the only truth – the Word of God. Then you are on the right track and will not be easily deceived by all the false teachers in this wicked world we live in.

Just before Jesus ascended to heaven after His resurrection at His first coming Jesus prayed for you and me and what He prayed for us is so very important:

"I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

SANCTIFY THEM THROUGH THY TRUTH: THY WORD IS TRUTH.

As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth." (John 17:15-19 KJV)

Read the Bible. It is not as difficult to understand as most think because the Holy Spirit will help you in understanding over time. Knowing the true Gospel of Jesus Christ of Salvation apart from works and self righteous good deeds is a good starting point in knowledge as you read the Scriptures. And in these modern times with the Internet, we have a vast treasure of Bible study tools online at our disposal, most of which is FREE! Take advantage and start today!

Chapter 6

What Does The Bible Mean By Repentance?

It is something that every Christian has done. If you have not done this one thing then you may not be a Christian but only think you are; **Repent**. The Scriptures are clear and Jesus Himself tells us that to be saved one needs to *repent*.

“From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.” (Matthew 4:17 KJV)

“But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.” (Matthew 9:13 KJV)

“I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.” (Luke 13:5 KJV)

“Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.” (Acts 3:19 KJV)

There seems to be much confusion about what the Bible means when it tells us to *Repent*. Does that mean that we just stop all sins and then we can be saved? Does that mean we must *do penance* for our sins? Does it mean we need to *turn from our sins*? Does it just mean we *feel sorry* for our sins?

John says, *“If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.”* (1 John 1:10). And John was addressing believers here, not

those who do not believe. So if he told believers with faith in Christ, then we can also conclude that to *repent* does not mean to simply stop sinning. That is not to say we should try to not sin. Sin has consequences! However, the word *repent* obviously does not mean to '*turn from your sin*' as a requirement of Salvation.

Is *repenting* something that we must do after we accept faith in Christ? Is *repenting* something that we must do over and over again each time we sin after our moment of our acceptance of Christ as our Lord and Savior? That is, when we sin after our initial moment of Salvation, do we have to repent of each sin by asking God to forgive us for that sin or risk losing our Salvation? There are so many false teachings about the word *repentance* it has made many believe in a false gospel requiring works, which Paul and James disagreed with very strongly.

CLEARING THE CONFUSION OVER REPENTANCE

The confusion over what *repentance* actually means is because modern day dictionaries do not define the word *repent* in the same way that the Bible defines the word. The definition of the word has changed over time and no longer is defined to mean what it meant in the time that Jesus walked on the Earth 2000 years ago. **This is very important to understand!**

Dictionary.com defines the word *repent* as "*to feel such sorrow for sin or fault as to be disposed to change one's life for the better; be penitent.*" If this were the definition for *repent* in the Bible then the entire Gospel and Salvation in Christ becomes a *false Gospel based on works and our own human effort*. A read through the book of Galatians shows that this cannot be the case.

"Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this

present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.”
(Galatians 1:3-8 KJV)

Even a brief review of the Gospel of Christ that Paul taught shows clearly that Salvation is not of human works or effort but that **Salvation is a free gift from God to be received**. Salvation is not something we work towards receiving. It is a gift that we receive. If someone gives you a gift, do they expect you to work or they will take back the gift? If so, it is not a gift right?

Apparently, there were some who wanted to add *works* as a requirement to be saved. This is opposite to the Gospel of Christ. In fact, it is like telling Christ that His sacrifice in blood for remission of our sins was not enough and not sufficient. God forbid a person act like that toward such a loving God! It is such a seriously wrong belief that Paul says,

*“But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, **let him be accursed.**”*
(Galatians 1:8 KJV)

THE TRUE BIBLICAL MEANING OF REPENTANCE

The word *repent* in the Bible has a completely different meaning than today's modern dictionary. Once you see the true Biblical meaning of *repentance* you can see how *good* the good news of the Gospel of Christ really is!

The New Testament was originally written in the Greek. This is important information for interpreting the Scriptures to find the true meaning of passages used in context.

The Greek word for *repent* is '*metanoia*' and is defined as "...a change of mind". You can see clearly now that the Biblical meaning of *repent* is nothing like the dictionary definition (change one's life for the better; be penitent.) True repentance is not a work that WE DO to gain God's acceptance and favour. God reached out to us first and provided a way for us sinners to be forgiven completely, but it is NOT from our own efforts. God gives Salvation to us as ***a free gift to be received.*** (*Ephesians 2:8-9*)

The Bible tells us that BEFORE God created the Earth He established the one and only way for us to be forgiven our sins and that way is by faith in the act of atonement provided by Jesus Christ on the cross. Repentance is changing our mind and thinking about how to be saved. We are NOT saved by our works, which is what the every religion in the world teaches. Even many '*Christian organized religions*' are teaching falsely and misusing the word *repent* and they add works as a requirement of Salvation. But that is NOT Biblical teaching.

We need to change our thinking about how we are saved to the true way of Salvation. It is 100% the grace of God, through faith in Jesus Christ and the atonement He provided by His shed blood. By believing this we ***have repented and turned towards God*** while He is already reaching out to us! That is a big difference from the false teaching that repenting is the act of us ***turning from our sin*** in our own effort *as a requirement* to stay saved. In fact, God Himself repents

many times in Scriptures. Does God have to turn from sin? No, God does not have sin! REPENT simply means to *change your mind*.

You see this world system and evil world view is not God's view and He wants us to turn from the world's way of dealing with sin and instead accept His way of dealing with our sin; faith in the atonement for our sin provided by the Son of God on the cross. To *repent* is the first step to Salvation in Christ. Repentance does not save a person, but it leads to Salvation as you change your mind about God and your sin debt against Him.

"Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing." (2 Corinthians 7:9 KJV)

There are Scriptures that *seem* to convey that to *Repent* is to turn away from and stop sinning. However, the Bible is very clear that Salvation is not of works or human effort. Salvation comes by believing the Gospel, not by *not sinning*. And if you really think about it; if you change your mind (*repent*) about God and how to have your sins forgiven, you may very well change and stop a particular sin you practiced in your life before Salvation.

However, the *repenting* is the change in your mind from the world's way of dealing with sin and changing to God's way of dealing with sin which is believing on Christ for Salvation apart from works of any kind (Ephesians 2:8-9). Stopping the practice of a particular sin is **a result of repenting and changing your mind**. That is, it is not the repenting itself.

THE MAIN BOOKS OF SALVATION PROVES THIS!

The book of John is all about how to be saved. Do you know that the word *repent* nor *repentance* does not even appear once! But the word *believe* on Christ is seen all over the book many times!

The book of Galatians. This is the book fighting against the false Gospel based on works for Salvation right? Again, the word *repent* is not found once in this book contending for the true Gospel! However the word *faith* in Jesus Christ is found all through the book!

The book of Romans. Paul tells us again and again that Salvation is not of works in any manner! And where the word *repent* is found, it is not the same Greek word. It does not mean *turning from your sin*.

The Christian religions need to stop using the dictionary definition of the word *repent*! They are teaching a false Gospel which is not helping people get saved nor know the truth of the Gospel. It is a very serious matter to understand as a believer.

FAILING WAY OF DEALING WITH SIN...

(a) There is no God.

(b) If I do good deeds it will make up for my sins and I will be in right standing with God. Or, I am full of sin and so I will run away from anything to do with God so my sin will not be revealed.

(c) I will make myself look like I am good on the outside and go to church everyday. I will assist in the church committees, I will be outstanding in religious rituals and these good deeds will make me walk in right standing with God. It is what I DO that determines whether or not I go to Heaven or Hell.

GODS WAY OF DEALING WITH SIN...

(a) God is Holy and He must punish someone that sins. The punishment for sinning is ETERNAL DEATH. (Romans 6:23)

(b) Everyone has sinned, regardless of how good they think they are and no good deeds can every make up for past sins committed.

(c) Jesus, the only Son of God, was born of the Virgin Mary (not born into sin as we are), lived a sinless life and freely gave His life on the cross to take the punishment for the sins that we commit and takes our place in punishment so we can be free from the punishment of sin.

(d) As a sinner you and I acknowledge that we have sinned against God. And we ask Jesus to forgive us all our sins (past,present and future) and accept the free **gift** of salvation from our debt of sin against God. The world's way to God is through works. But the real way to God is by God's grace through faith:

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.” (Ephesians 2:8 KJV)

This is what true repentance is. We turn from working away our sin debt, or out right ignoring it, (the World's way) to accepting His gift of love and forgiveness (God's way). Jesus, the only son of God who existed before the universe was even created, of His own free will died on the cross and took our place and punishment for sin's we have committed. On that cross He freed us from our sin debt and gave us God's very righteousness, in Christ.

Once you accept this gift from God you are now what the Bible calls positionally *Righteous*. Not because of our works nor our sinless life, but because Christ bore the punishment for all of our sins. It is God who first loved us and reached out to us. God is love and waits for you to return to a relationship with Him. This is the *Good News* of the Gospel. So when Jesus tells us that we need *to repent* it means we need *to believe the Gospel message* and to believe in God's view in how to deal with the sin debt we all have against a Perfectly Holy and Just God.

“Now after John was put in prison, Jesus came to Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and saying, “The time is fulfilled, and the

kingdom of God is at hand. Repent, and believe in the gospel.” (Mark 1:14-15 KJV)

“Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.” (John 14: 5-6 KJV)

Jesus did not tell Thomas that no one comes to the Father except he *stops sinning*. Jesus said *'but by me'*. When a person asks for the forgiveness provided through Christ. When a person asks Jesus for forgiveness and invites God through the forgiveness provided, then that person becomes a new creation in the spirit. A new created being. They *have repented* by doing so. They believed on Christ for Salvation. In fact, God lives within every believer as Jesus said,

“Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.” (John 14:19-20 KJV)

I can attest to this truth from my own personal experience in life. He makes it so clear to me in every circumstance in ways that I will know that it must be Him, within me and with me. And He does work through me as well, probably more than I know!

And after many years now I know, that I know, that Christ is with me through the Holy Spirit. It is a mystery – no doubt about it! But it is simply the truth. God gave us the free gift of Eternal life through Jesus, the Christ. And all we have to do is believe, feel sorry about our sin and ask for His forgiveness and He will forgive us, justify us and set us free. After the moment of a person's Salvation in Christ the Holy Spirit comes and dwells within a believer. And over time the Holy Spirit will make Himself known to you and will teach you all things.

“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.” (John 14:26 KJV)

THE PARABLE OF THE LOST SON – ARE YOU ONE?

“And he said, A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son

was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.” (Luke 15:11-24 KJV)

If you have never had a change of mind about the truth...

...that God exists and that Jesus is The Christ, God in the flesh,

...that the Bible is true with proof no other religious writing have,

...that He is perfect in every way,

...that He is Perfectly Holy and Perfectly Just,

...that He never changes,

...that He must punish sin,

...and that the only way back to God is to admit you are a sinner,

...and that the ONLY way back to the one true God of the universe is through the sacrificial atonement of Jesus Christ, the Son Of God, for the remission of your sin,

THEN I SAY TO YOU... Repent for the kingdom of God is at hand!

Today can be the day of your Salvation. This very day in the next few minutes! Your Salvation is NOT of works in self effort. It is a GIFT TO BE RECEIVED for your sins (past/present/future). Come as you are – full of sin and regrets and hangups, guilty before God. God is waiting for you to accept His free GIFT OF SALVATION. It is a HOLY PARDON that is free to you but we must remember that Christ paid a heavy price in His blood to obtain your Salvation. He longs to forgive you COMPLETELY for ALL the sins in your life.

Chapter 7

Only Faith In Christ. Nothing Else Required.

*“Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:”
(Colossians 2:8-10 KJV)*

NOT PHILOSOPHY, ONLY CHRIST

Philosophy cannot save a person from their sin, nor their sinful ways. All philosophy is nothing more than what men think. It is nothing more than what humankind thinks, *without God*. It is the *traditions of men* and is *the basic principles* of the world.

When the Bible talks about *the world*, it is not talking about the Earth, or planet Earth. When the Bible speaks of *the world* it means *the world system* that the world is being run under. It is a system, without God. It is talking about the *unbelieving* and *unredeemed* in Christ. It is a world of the unredeemed and is ultimately being run under Satan himself.

Since the fall in Eden, Satan has a certain amount of authority on our planet. That is why the Bible calls Satan *the god of this world* (2 Corinthians 4:4). He is called *the ruler of this world* in John 12:31. God has ultimate sovereignty and authority of course, but God has allowed Satan a certain level of control over the world since the fall in Eden.

Satan has control over all the things that influence unbeliever's daily lives. He controls the education, economic systems, the media and more. Individuals that are not saved do not have the Holy Spirit living within them. This allows Satan to take up that void and he does so with cunning and great deception and lies. The Bible tells us that Satan deceives the whole *world* - that is the *unbelievers* of the Gospel.

What is Satan doing? He is trying to get humans to fulfill the very sin he did when he rebelled against God. The sin of PRIDE. Satan is just fine if he can deceive us into:

1. Ignoring God and a person's sin debt...*in pride*.
2. Thinking they are a 'good person' by comparing their sin with others who do more wicked things...*in pride*.
3. Trying to make up for their sins by doing good deeds in self righteousness...*in pride*.
4. The devil loves it when people are religious and do religious rituals in self effort as if could save them from their sin debt... *its all PRIDE!*

We need *to die to self* as believers. We have to admit that we are hopeless sinners who have sinned against God and have no way, through any self effort, to save ourselves from the wrath of God against a sinner. We must HUMBLE ourselves and cry out to God for Mercy. This is what God wants us to do. It is the only way God can get us to the place where we accept Christ's pardon for sins committed.

We need to admit we have sinned against others and God. Ask Jesus to forgive you and accept His pardon and atonement as a free gift and have faith and

rely only on Christ to save you. This is the only way to be saved from the prison of sin, *without pride!*

Satan knows that if he can get us to try and either ignore the Gospel message by keeping our eyes and ears away from it, we can be deceived and controlled. He also knows that '*religion*' and '*religious things*' is another great way to deceive people into believing that THEY must do something to save them from the wrath of God. He encourages *the self* and *self righteous living*, all under the disguise of 'Christian' religions. He is quite effective if we look around at the large scale spreading of false Gospel messages happening in most Christian religious organizations and denominations these days.

If Satan did not have a certain amount of control over the world, we would be living in Utopia with God ruling the governments on the Earth. Well look around. Do we have Utopia? Does peace rule the world today? Is the television and Internet full of goodness and Godly content or is it just the opposite? Yes, God is in ultimate control of the entire universe and the Earth. In fact, Jesus Christ will come again and setup HIS government to rule the world and Satan will be locked up for 1000 years. It is part of the End Times prophecies the Bible tells us will happen. But is it here now? No , it is not. It is still to come. It is very obvious that Satan has a certain amount of authority on the world systems at this time and the Bible agrees that is the case. It is humankind (starting with Adam and Eve in Eden) that has disobeyed God and believed the devil's deception, *in pride*. In this way, humankind is responsible for giving Satan authority in the world. God gave us the authority to rule the world but then we believed the devils deception and in pride we fell and in doing so, gave Satan a certain amount of ruling control.

NOT LEGALISM, ONLY CHRIST

"In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it." (Colossians 2:11-15 KJV)

Legalism is running rampant in Christian organizations, groups and among individuals calling themselves Christians. When Jesus died on the cross He took upon Himself the punishment for the sins of the whole world. The Law (Ten Commandments) are no longer to rule over a believer because all your sins are completely forgiven. Here we see this Scripture says *'having forgiven us ALL trespasses (sins)'* and that Jesus on the cross also *'wiped out the handwriting REQUIREMENTS that was against us'* which we never could do ourselves and that is why this Scripture continues saying *'that was contrary to us'*.

Legalism **has no place in the faith of a believer and it has no power over your Salvation.** Salvation is a work of God alone. A GIFT that we could never attain through legalistic activities and living. Doing penance or even doing good works is not required for Salvation either because these are legalistic, self righteous acts. That is not to say that a believer will not, or should not, perform good works out of love. God works are, well.. good! However, the point being made here is that good works will not *save anyone from their sins.* And neither will legalistic activities save

a person from their sin debt. Only believing in the free gift of Salvation through the atonement of Jesus Christ and what He DID, will save a person.

Legalism in churches is when the pastor or preacher or priest is always telling the congregation that in order to be and remain saved they must DO this, or DO that, or DON'T DO THIS, or DON'T DO THAT. With legalism it is always DO, DO, DO. ***Basically it is a bunch of Doo Doo!***

Humour aside, this is a perfectly correct statement! To be a Christian is not to follow a set of regulations and rules in order to be or remain saved.

"Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: " (Colossians 2:16 KJV)

There are many Christians that also tell believers they MUST ALSO keep the Saturday Sabbath and not doing so will condemn them and cause loss of Salvation. Others say, you must not eat pork. Others yet, you must not eat meat on Good Friday. This Scripture tells us that is completely false and is not part of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Other than the Sabbath Day, these are regulations that men put into place, not God. As as for the Sabbath Day, Jesus said , *"And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath."* (Mark 2:27 KJV) The Jewish people in Jesus time were always badgering Him about doing healing on the Sabbath. And Jesus continually told them that they were not using the Sabbath as intended. Because they were using it in such a *legalistic manner*. Jesus told them plainly that He is the Lord of the Sabbath (Matthew 12:8) and yet they were telling Him what He was doing on the Sabbath was wrong. What nerve!

“Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?” (Colossians 2:20-22 KJV)

All these 'do' and 'don't' legalistic rules and all the regulations in the world will not save a person from the wicked sinful nature we have within us. They are all OUTWARD acts to make a person LOOK righteous on the outside to others. But it is within, *the inner being of a person*, that counts and all the outwardly acts will not change the fleshly mind of a person. We are still sinners! Jesus said,

““And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.” (Mark 7 20-23 KJV)

Believe only in the faith of Jesus Christ to save you from your sins. Allowing the Holy Spirit within a believer to change you and sanctify your inner man throughout your life, while Christ is not holding your sins against you in the flesh because they are already paid for. Until one day, at the Rapture, we will receive our new immortal bodies, without the sinful nature we struggle against and we will be as Christ is, perfect.

This is the work of God alone. Our job is to believe and be thankful, NOT DO, to be saved! Good works will follow Salvation but they are in gratitude for God saving us and for love toward others, not good works to remain saved. Once saved, you are always saved!

Chapter 8

What Does It Mean To Be Sealed With The Holy Spirit?

Understanding the attributes of God provided in the Bible is a key to greater understanding of the Scriptures. It provides a filter to see the true meaning in passages and acts as a magnifying glass to see the truth. We must understand that *God never changes* (Malachi 3:6, Hebrews 13:8, James 1:17, Psalms 90:2) and is 100% *perfectly Holy* Revelation 4:8, Peter 1:15-16, Exodus 3:5 and 100% *perfectly Just* (Deuteronomy 32:4) and He *must punish sin*. And the Bible tells us that the wages of sin is death; an *eternal death in a place of torment* (Romans 6:23). The Bible says *ALL have sinned* (Romans 3:23, 1 John 1:8) and that is the very bad news for the human race.

However, the other attributes of God must also be met for God to maintain His perfect character. God is also 100% *Merciful* (Romans 3:23-24, Hebrews 8:12) so He sent His only begotten Son as a human to die for the sins of the world that the world might be redeemed.

“For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. “ (John 3:17 KJV)

Jesus is the *God-Man*. Christ is the one and only mediator between sinful humankind and God (*1 Timothy 2: 5-6* , John 14:6). On the cross Jesus Christ took upon Himself the punishment that we deserved even though He *never sinned* (*Hebrews 4:15*). That is an amazing fact. Jesus did not sin outwardly but He also

never sinned inwardly, in His mind as well. That is something we humans simply cannot accomplish ourselves through self effort. When Christ died on the cross as *the God-Man*, it was a satisfactory punishment for our sins. He became the bridge between sinful man to our Holy God. Jesus took our place and our sins were nailed to that cross (Colossians 2:14). When we believe this, we are at that very moment forgiven all our sins (past/present/future) and ***made righteous*** and are saved for all eternity, never to lose our Salvation. He *sealed us* with the Holy Spirit indwelling within us as a new created being.

*“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, **ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise**, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.” (Ephesians 1:13-16 KJV)*

At the moment of belief in the atonement Christ provided on the cross, we were changed positionally. Positionally we are now 100% righteous before God because all the sins we committed, or will commit after Salvation, were all *penalty paid* on the cross in Jesus. And now this is what God says about those who believe on the atonement of sins through what Christ did on the cross,

“For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.” (Hebrews 8:12 KJV)

That is the GOOD NEWS of the Gospel of Jesus Christ! We are saved 100% by the GRACE of God through faith in Christ's redemptive work. Salvation is NOT based on our good works nor our self righteous acts and rituals in ANY MANNER, neither before or after Salvation. Paul repeatedly wrote to not mix The Law (10

Commandments) with Grace. *To do that is a false Gospel.* There are many Scriptures from Paul that make this very clear.

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS OUR DOWN PAYMENT AND PROOF THAT WE ARE HEAVEN BOUND!

The Holy Spirit is our proof of inheritance and is a down payment (earnest) which shows that we were purchased by Christ and are Heaven bound from the very moment of our Salvation through belief in the atonement provided by Christ. Once sealed nothing can separate us from the love of God and our Salvation cannot be lost.

“And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.” (Ephesians 4:30 KJV)

*“Now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who also hath given unto us the **earnest** of the Spirit.” (2 Corinthians 5:5 KJV)
[earnest means guarantee]*

Section II

Paul & James

Are In

Agreement

Chapter 9

Paul Taught That Salvation Is Not By Good Works

If you look through all the Epistles (an Epistle is a letter) of Paul it is very evident that he taught that Salvation is by faith in the atonement of Jesus Christ, without works nor rituals of any kind. Obeying the Law will not save a person because it is impossible for us to do that with the sin nature we all have. That all of us are sinners headed for the judgment of God, God's wrath, and are desperately wicked. That Salvation is something that happens in a moment of time and at the moment of Repentance (changing mind/view about sin) by accepting through faith the forgiveness of all your life's sins by the act of atonement Jesus provided to us all for the remission of sins (Matthew 26:28). This is what Paul taught. Let's look at some of the many Scriptures and teachings of Paul on this subject and you can see for yourself.

*"For by **GRACE** are ye saved **THOROUGH FAITH**; and that **NOT of yourselves**: it is the **GIFT of God**: **NOT OF WORKS**, lest any man should **BOAST**." (Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)*

*"For there is **ONE God**, and **ONE mediator** between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself **A RANSOM** for all, to be testified in due time. (1 Timothy 2: 5-6 KJV)*

*"Now to the one who **WORKS**, his wage is **NOT RECKONED** on the basis of **GRACE**, but as what is **DUE**. But to **the one who DOES NOT WORK**, but **BELIEVES in Him (Jesus) WHO JUSTIFIES the ungodly**, his faith is reckoned as **RIGHTEOUSNESS**." (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)*

“Knowing that a man is NOT JUSTIFIED BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW, but BY THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST, even we have BELIEVED in Jesus Christ, that we might BE JUSTIFIED by the FAITH OF CHRIST, and NOT BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW: FOR BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW SHALL NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED.. But if, while we seek to be justified BY CHRIST, we ourselves also are FOUND SINNERS, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make MYSELF a transgressor. For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but CHRIST LIVETH IN ME: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. I do not frustrate the grace of God: for IF RIGHTEOUSNESS COME BY THE LAW, THEN CHRIST DIED IN VAIN.” (Galatians 2:16-21 KJV)

“I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, LET HIM BE ACCURSED.” (Galatians 2:6-8 KJV)

In Galatians, there were those who came and started telling the believers that in order to be saved, the practices of the Law are also required and not faith alone in Christ. That is that works and rituals of the Law are also still required. Paul called this a 'perversion' of the Gospel of Christ. He called it 'another Gospel', that is to say a fake gospel message. And he says that *it is a very serious matter*. So serious that those that add anything to the Gospel message of faith in Christ alone as the way to Salvation are to be 'accursed'. If a person's righteousness come by following the Law, then Christ died for our sins, *in vain*. If a person believes they can work away their sin debt by following the Law (by *doing good works* and *being a good person*) they do so in complete PRIDE. They are saying they have a self righteousness that will lead to Salvation because they are following the law.

They are saying that Christ's Sacrifice for our sins was not sufficient. God forbid!
This will never work.

NO ONE IS RIGHTEOUS BEFORE GOD BY THEIR WORKS.

In Romans 2, Paul is talking about the fact that both Jew and Gentile (a gentile is anyone not a Jew) needs Salvation. The Jews were saying that they had some kind of advantage over the Gentiles because after all they were God's chosen people. The written word of God and the Law (Ten Commandments) was after all given to them through Moses and not through Gentiles. However, Paul points out that the Jews are just as guilty as the Gentiles,

*"Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, **whoever you are who judge, for in whatever you judge another you condemn yourself; for you who judge practice the same things.** But we know that the judgment of God is according to truth against those who practice such things. **And do you think this, O man, you who judge those practicing such things, and doing the same, that you will escape the judgment of God?**" (Romans 2:1-3 KJV)*

*"For as many as have sinned without law shall also **perish without law:** and as many as have sinned in the law shall be **judged by the law;**" (Romans 2:12 KJV)*

*"Behold, thou art called a Jew, and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God, and knowest his will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law; And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness, An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law. **Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?"** (Romans 2: 17-22 KJV)*

Paul is stating clearly to the Jews that they are no different in God's eyes in regards to Salvation because they also sin against the Law of God, just as the Gentiles do. They are boasting in God because God made them the chosen people of the world through whom the word of God and the Law came through Moses. But Paul tells them that their own thoughts like this condemn them in the judgment of God. ***To God, sin is sin.*** If you disobey any point of the Ten Commandments, you are guilty before God. We are all guilty before God regardless of your social status and good works. Neither will save you. Neither will erase the stain of sin in your life.

In Romans 3, Paul gets right to the point. He acknowledges that the Jews are a special people and a chosen people. But he shows them that they need Salvation through Jesus Christ. He is discussing the Jews and the Gentiles . The Jews followed the Law, the Gentiles do not because the Law was NEVER even given to the Gentiles. Here we see that Paul shows the Jews that ALL HAVE SINNED and ALL are guilty before God of sin. No one is right with God. All are headed for the wrath of God because of our sin. When Paul says '*Are we better than they?*' the *we* is the Jews because Paul was a Jew.

*"What then? **Are we better than they? Not at all.** For we have previously charged both Jews and Greeks that they are all under sin." (Romans 3: 9 KJV)*

Paul is telling us straight out that ALL are under sin. That is to say, we all have this *sin nature problem*. Every person! Were you born on Earth? Yep.. you have a SIN PROBLEM! Jesus is the only one that never sinned because he was born of God through the virgin Mary (Luke 1:27). He was not even born in sin! Jesus was God in the flesh (Colossians 1:15-19) and we know that God NEVER sins.

Then Paul uses the word of God in the Torah (what we now call the Old Testament) to make this clear to these Jews. He does this by providing quite a number of Old Testament Scriptures to back up what he is telling them. He is reminding them and letting them know, these are not just Paul's own thoughts, it is the word of God that states this clearly.

"As it is written:

"There is none righteous, no, not one;

There is none who understands;

There is none who seeks after God.

They have all turned aside;

They have together become unprofitable;

There is none who does good, no, not one."

"Their throat is an open tomb; With their tongues they have practiced deceit";

"The poison of asps is under their lips";

"Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness."

"Their feet are swift to shed blood; Destruction and misery are in their ways; And the way of peace they have not known."

"There is no fear of God before their eyes."

*Now we know that whatever the law says, it says to those who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. **Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin.**" (Romans 3:10-20 KJV)*

The Law was not provided to humankind so that we could be justified before God by obeying the Law. The Law was provided by God *so we could see* just how horribly sinful we really are. The Law is like a mirror, showing us our sins that we can't see ourselves. Not by comparing ourselves to others who do more

wicked things, but by comparing ourselves to God's perfect standard of Holiness, the Law, the Ten Commandments of God.

We are all sinners who require the Mercy of God to avoid God's judgment for our sins. There is NOTHING we can do in self righteous acts that will atone for our sins. That is why the high priest of the Jews had to Sacrifice a Lamb without blemish to atone for the sins of the people. It was a foreshadowing of the one and final sacrifice for the sins we commit, through Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God who took away the sins of the world on the cross. (Hebrews 12).

Now let's look what Jesus Himself had to say about this. The people asked Jesus a very direct question. This is the perfect opportunity for Christ to tell the whole crowd clearly what exactly is the will of God for us sinners?

*"Then said they unto him, **What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?** Jesus answered and said unto them, **This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.** They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.*

*Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. **For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.***

*Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, **I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.** But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, **and believe not.** All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out." (John 6:28-37 KJV)*

Jesus then goes on to tell the people what the WILL of God is,

“For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father’s will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.” (John 6: 38-40 KJV)

Jesus did not answer these questions about *how do we do the works of God* and *what is God’s will for me* by responding with, DO THIS, or DO THAT. You need THIS RITUAL or that ritual. What Jesus responded with instead was '*This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.*' and '*believe on the Son of God*'. It is not about works, it is about belief in Christ for the remissions of your sins. Salvation is God’s work, not our work. We should have NO BOASTING in it at all. (Ephesians 2:8-9). Our part to be saved is to believe that Christ died and shed His blood on the cross and paid the penalty for the sins we commit during our life. And to accept this free pardon gift *by faith alone*, without anything else added.

And you need to realize that God chose Paul to show us the entirety of the Gospel of Grace through Christ. Paul is the writer of two thirds of the New Testament! That carries a lot of weight does it not?

Chapter 10

What did James Mean By 'Faith Without Works Is Dead'?

Some take a verse here and a verse there out of the Book of James and then make enormous assumptions that James and Paul are contradicting each other. Some read James and base their entire belief about how to be saved based on James and then read into some verses in Paul's writings wrongly. But when you look at James in context, nothing is further from the truth. In fact, James believed the same as Paul did eventually; Justification and Salvation with God are not by good works nor religious rituals. What do I mean by eventually?

Apostle Paul tells us again and again that Salvation and justification with God is by FAITH ALONE and is not of ourselves nor our self righteous efforts. (1 Corinthians 15:1-14, Ephesians 2:8-9, Romans chapter 4 and 5, and many other writings of Paul.) Then we have James writing that 'faith without works is dead'. So which is it? Are James and Paul in disagreement?

First, as with all study of Scripture, using proper context matters GREATLY. So let's get some context for the book of James shall we?

WHO WAS JAMES?

James was the half-brother of Jesus Christ. During Christ's ministry on earth, James doubted that Jesus was the Messiah, but after Christ died and rose from the dead, James could not deny the facts as he seen the risen Christ (1 Corinthians 15:7) and so believed in Jesus for eternal life and became an Apostle.

He soon became one of the elders in the rapidly growing Jerusalem church, and when we come to Acts 15, we read that he presided over the Jerusalem council.

It is at that council, that James, along with Peter and Paul, affirmed the decision to take the gospel message to the Gentiles. There was a CHANGE from the Gospel being taught to the Jews, where works were also involved, to the Gospel of Grace given by Jesus from Heaven. The Eleven Apostles learned about Salvation by Jesus' Earthly ministry and they had not heard of the secrets to be revealed by Jesus from His heaven based reality. Apostle Paul learned the Gospel of Grace directly from the risen Lord as well but from heaven. So they all received Gospels from the Lord; Peter from Jesus' Earthly ministry teachings BEFORE the cross and Paul from Jesus' heavenly based reality.

The Eleven Apostles did not understand that the cross meant a change of dispensations. A change from the Gospel of the Kingdom preached to the Jews to Salvation by faith in Christ alone for Salvation.

We read in Acts 15:7-11:

"And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us; And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith. Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they." (Acts 15:7-11 KJV)

The debate at this point was over. Paul is now accepted and is the 12th Apostle to replace Judas. Paul had proven to Peter, the leader, that He was sent by

God to preach the Gospel of Grace. The Gospel for the new dispensation after the cross. The two different Gospels changed into one. The one in the new dispensation after the cross. The mystery given to Apostle Paul was now the Gospel to be preached to the Jews and the Gentiles and that was Salvation is not of works but faith alone on Christ crucified, died and risen. It was Paul's Gospel only now and it is by Paul's Gospel that a person is saved in the new dispensation in which we live in today. The Gospel for us Gentiles and Jews on this side of the cross is Romans to Philemon.

WHY IS ACTS 15 SO IMPORTANT TO UNDERSTAND WHEN READING JAMES?

Because James wrote this epistle BEFORE all this occurred! It was never stated to him that the Mosaic Law was over. All believers were Jews who believed the 'Gospel of the Kingdom', not the Gospel of the 'Grace of God'. James knew NOTHING about Salvation on this side of the cross being by faith alone, not of ourselves as Paul taught in Ephesians 2:8-9. We see that James did not learn this new revelation given to Paul by the risen Christ until Acts 21:17-20.

This was a BIG REVEAL AND A BIG CHANGE on this side of the cross for James to understand! There was a change of Gospels that hinged on the event of the cross and Christ risen and it was solidified in Acts 15. So keep that in sharp mind when reading James! James rightfully so reads as an Old Testament writing because without the knowledge given to Paul, it basically is. Acts is a transition to the NEW GOSPEL of Grace through Christ crucified. This is OUR GOSPEL to follow today.

WHO WAS JAMES ADDRESSING HIS WRITINGS TOO?

The book of James is likely one of the first books written that we find in the New Testament. Verse 1 says it was written to the twelve tribes scattered abroad. Who then? He is writing to the Jews before the Gospel of Grace was even known to him. And there are two kinds of Jews, believing Jews and unbelieving Jews. Which kind is this letter written to?

- Look at verse 2 where we read, 'my brethren'.
- Skip down to verse 16: Do not be deceived, 'my beloved brethren'.
- Verse 19: So then, 'my beloved brethren'.

James is writing to the Brethren. So who are his brethren? Are his brethren just other Jews or believing Jews? We read in James 2:1, *'My brethren, do not hold the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with partiality.'* These early Jewish believers were under constant pressure to return to the rituals of Law keeping. James is encouraging them to remain faithful in good works, in what they do, to the Salvation they accepted as believers and not fall back to the Law of Moses, not even in partial terms. So we know now by the context of James that he is addressing JEWISH BELIEVERS. In fact, you can go through the rest of this letter and discover that quite clearly, James is writing to Jewish believers.

WHAT IS THE REASON FOR JAMES' LETTER?

James is writing to the early church of Jewish BELIEVERS in Christ. They were being persecuted by their fellow non believing Jews. They had tremendous pressure to go back to the Jewish faith under the Law of Moses. It could not have

been easy for them! They had trouble getting along with one another. They had trouble knowing how much of the Old Testament law they still had to keep, if any of it.

James is addressing New believers in the early Jewish church. These new believers are learning the faith after being steeped so deeply in the Law of Moses for justification with God which Jesus clearly refuted in His Earthly ministry. In comparison, as new believers do today (works or faith) until they eventually are confronted with the seemingly contradiction from Romans and Ephesians 2:8-9 and James 2. Although as you are about to find out..there is no contradiction at all. A new dispensation began.

This ends the controversy between what James and Paul taught, between Romans and James in the New Testament. Salvation in the Old Testament times, even just after the cross involved both faith and works. James was written from this perspective. This context matters greatly, yes? YES! There IS a contradiction between Romans and James but in reality there is no contradiction in what James believed once he met Paul! Once the Gospel of Grace, revealed to Paul by the risen Christ, was revealed to James and the other eleven Apostles, James followed Paul's Gospel as well.

James ***eventually believed*** as Apostle Paul; Salvation is not of ourselves in any manner as taught by Paul to the Ephesians:

"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast." (Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)

AND THAT IS WHAT WE SHOULD BELIEVE TODAY because we are still within the 6th dispensation of the Grace of God. We are actually nearing the end of the dispensation.

Chapter 11

What should we learn from the writings of James?

First, we need to read James through the lens of the Gospel Paul taught. Second, we need to understand that how a believer lives after Salvation matters to God. Some will receive rewards for their good works and others may lose rewards at the Bema judgment of believers right after the Rapture. And some will have no reward at all yet they are still saved because Salvation and justification is NOT of works as Apostle Paul taught (Ephesians 2:8-9). However, our works after our moment of Salvation DOES MATTER to God.

James is all about the fact that as believers we should be living for Christ. We should be WALKING THE WALK – not just TALKING about it. Helping others. Helping our Christian brethren. Doing good and what is right. Looking at people as all equal regardless of their wealth or social status. This part of James' message really applies to us as well living under the New Covenant.

Faith alone in Christ alone gets you into heaven. Works earn you rewards in heaven. If all you have is faith in Christ, that will get you into heaven (Eph. 2:8-9, 1 Cor. 15:1-4, John 3:18), but faith will not save your reward, or inheritance or profit that could have been yours in heaven. When Christians ask, "Why can't I sin all I want?" the most basic Biblical answer is: Because you will lose heavenly reward. I mean, where is your gratitude for the love Christ has bestowed on us? We are to love others as Christ first loved us. An unconditional love. A non-condemning love. Love others as you would want to be loved.

As believer's in Christ our Salvation cannot be lost but our eternal rewards are at stake. Given what Christ did for us, should we not be acting on love towards others as well? This is the thrust of James' message to these Jewish believers and rightly so.

"If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone." (James 2:15-17 KJV)

Today we live under the Gospel of the Grace of God that Apostle Paul taught from Romans to Philemon. And many believers, when they read verses 15-17, think that 'dead' means, not in existence. They say that this means such a person is not saved because their faith is dead, or not true faith. But again, in proper context, James is speaking to the brethren. He never knew about the Gospel Christ gave to Paul yet.

The word DEAD in this verse in the Greek is '*nekros*' and used as a metaphor has a meaning of '*being spiritually dead, destitute of a life that recognizes and is devoted to God, because given up to trespasses and sins, inactive as respects doing right destitute of force or power, inactive, inoperative.*'

James is not saying that such people are no longer saved. He is not saying they are dead and not part of the brethren. No, he is addressing saved people, believers and is using the word 'dead' as a metaphor. James is addressing believers that they should be living for God out of gratitude.

We see this same Greek word in the story of the Prodigal Son that Jesus spoke of: "For this my son was dead (*nekros*), and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry." (Luke 15:24 KJV). Does the word 'dead' in

this passage mean he was no longer a son when he ran off and used his inheritance on wasteful things? NO! He was still the fathers son right? Of course. Did it affect their fellowship? Yes, the father was constantly hoping he would return to his senses and come back home. In the same way, James is addressing saved believers who are eternally sons and daughters of Christ, but who should be doing the work of the father instead of useless wasteful living.

James is writing about how we are walking and living AFTER our justification and Salvation. James 2 starts with the VERY first word as “MY BRETHREN”. He is talking to those saved by believing on Christ alone for Salvation.

“My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called?”

If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

*So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.”
(James 2:1-12 KJV)*

James is saying that as saved people, we should not be judging people solely by their wealth. Rich or poor, we are all rich in Christ. Both rich and poor are on equal standing before God as He is no respecter of persons. As believers, how are we living? Are we living for God or are we walking in carnality? We should be helping the poor and we should be living Godly lives and following the example Jesus gave us. Pray for your enemies, help the poor, do unto others as you would have them do unto you etc. This is living a life of liberty in Christ!

James is asking a good question to these believers. Questions we should ask ourselves now living under the New Covenant as well. If you see someone in need and just pray for them but do not help them however you can, is your faith in Christ helpful?

“For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.”

Under Apostle Paul's teachings, a believer should be walking by the spirit. That is lining up with what God wants in our lives and then he can place desires in our heart to perform good works which God has placed before us to accomplish. At the judgment seat of Christ believers will be rewarded for such good works.

But those believers living carnally, that choose to walk by the flesh all the time and live in constant sin, ignoring mercy to others and not helping those in

need need to wake up! Yes, they are saved and their sins forgiven. Yes, they are justified and righteous in Christ. Yes, they are Heaven bound! Salvation is eternal by God's Grace. However, that does not mean they have been given a license to sin without consequences!

"For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also." (James 2:26 KJV)

Reading James through the lens of the Gospel Paul taught, a persons dead body is pretty much useless to help anyone in need or do anything useful. It is there, lifeless and will eventually rot away. If believers are just living in constant sin and being carnal by living constantly in the flesh instead of walking by the spirit, they have become useless. Their faith is dead. Yes, they are still saved. But they are not of much use in this life. God may even decide to take them out of here by taking their life.

We see the same thing in John 15 which also addresses believers. We need to be abiding in Christ and Christ's words so that God can place desires in our heart to accomplish good works he has set before us.

"I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in

you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.” (John 15:5-8 KJV)

“Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.” (James 2:18-19 KJV)

James is not saying that it is the works that save a person. He is talking about the evidence of a truly saved person. Even today living under Paul's Gospel, you know a person can go to church daily and talk the talk. They can quote doctrine and Scriptures. They may have 'head knowledge'. It is good to have head knowledge but you need more than that to save you. Having head knowledge about Scriptures is not the same as repentance and asking God to forgive you for all your sins because Christ died for you. If a person believes with head knowledge only and thinks they can just keep on living how ever they want, and still be saved, they would be wrong. That is the wrong kind of faith. That is faith only 'intellectually'. Such faith is DEAD. It is useless for the total life long list of sins committed and useless for remission of a person's sins.

James makes a strong point that even Satan and his fallen angels have faith that God exists. They know that Jesus is the Son Of God right? Demons know the Scriptures too. The demons Jesus cast out acknowledged Christ as Lord, but are those fallen angels saved or damned to hell? Do you think Satan knows what the Bible says? Yes, he does. And he takes it all as true by faith and what is he doing? He is using it to kill us by jamming the Law down our throats to make us feel guilty before God after Salvation. He is constantly accusing us of our sins before God (Revelation 12:10). Just believing and just knowing the facts with head knowledge DOES NOT SAVE A PERSON.

What kinds of works are the fallen angels doing do you think? The Bible says EVIL WORKS. And so James is saying that 'I will show you my faith BY my works' . A true believer, in faith, should have some evidence in Godly works, good works. Evidence that they are actually saved. Not that the works are what saves them. James says that 'I will show you my faith BY my works'.

As believers in the Gospel of Grace that Paul taught, we should reflect on this. Is our outward life matching the newly created Spirit we became at our conversion?

NOW YOU KNOW!

Understanding the CHANGE of Gospels that happened at the cross, we see in Acts the answer to WHY Paul and James writings seem to be in contradiction. **Because they are in regards to works!** But James, as we see in Acts, *came to know* the new Gospel of Grace that was revealed to Paul and like the other Apostles, they taught it to the Jews and Gentiles from that point forward.

I hope this has helped in your understanding of this very common controversy.

Chapter 12

What Must I -DO- To Be Saved

"...whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved." (John 3:15-17 KJV)

Become saved through belief in the atonement provided by Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son Of God. Salvation is a *GIFT from God to be received*, not of self righteous works and rituals. It is God's loving and super abounding GRACE towards us while we were yet His enemies, full of a sin debt that we could never repay for forgiveness. It is God's *unmerited favour toward us* so that we could be forgiven all our sins and become the righteousness of God, IN CHRIST. (2 Corinthians 5:21)

If you believe the Gospel message, pray to God and acknowledge that you have sinned against God many many times, and you have broken the Holy Law Of God. **Believe by faith** that you cannot save yourself and that you want to receive His gift of Salvation through the atonement for sins that He paid for with His shed blood on the cross.

From the very moment of your belief and acceptance of the gift of Salvation, the Holy Spirit will SEAL you. He will come and create you NEW in the Spirit. And you can have FULL assurance that you are saved and headed for Heaven. The Holy Spirit will start to sanctify you, and will correct you when you sin and help you to overcome sins (although you will still sin after salvation). It is a life long process

and it takes time. Abide in Christ and read His words in the Bible. Learn all that you can and one day you will be amazed at how much God will show you.

Chapter 13

The Old Covenant is A Foreshadowing Of What Christ Accomplished

The Ten Commandments (The Law), and the Old Covenant, was only a foreshadowing that could not save anyone nor make anyone righteous. The animal blood sacrifices were a *remembrance* of the sins of the people committed during the year. They only *covered the sins* of the people as they believed in the Messiah to come. A remembrance of just how evil sin actually is to God. The real way of righteousness for the people was to remember the promise of a Messiah who God would send that would one day become the final blood sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. The Old Covenant animal sacrifices and rituals all pointed to the real way of salvation; a belief on the foretold Christ to come. For us today, Christ has already come 2000 years ago and it is the same belief on Christ and **His finished work** on the cross that saves us. The only difference is a matter of perspective. They looked forward to the cross event and we now look back to the cross event.

In fact, everything in the Old Covenant was all foreshadows of Christ Crucified to pay for the sins of the whole world. And this fact of The Law for OT people was all to show people they are sinners because of their fallen state since Adam fell; having a sin nature. And that they could not keep the Commandments of God PERFECTLY.

WHY WAS THERE ANIMAL SACRIFICES UNDER THE OLD COVENANT?

*“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and **man became a living soul.** ”*
(Genesis 2:17 KJV)

The SOUL is not a person's Spirit. The SOUL is our body and mind and Spirit. The Spirit part is the real us, it is our very core being of life. When God created humankind, He formed the body from the dust of the Earth and then breathed His life into the body (His Spirit) and it became a living SOUL (Genesis 2:7). The physical body and mind, and the Spirit; the three parts of who a person actually is. Just as God said , “**Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:** ” (Genesis 1:26 KJV) , so we too are three in one. God is a Trinity; God the Father, God the Son and the Holy Spirit. When Adam and Eve sinned, the Spirit of God in them died just as God warned them,

*“But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof **thou shalt surely die.** ”*
(Genesis 2:17 KJV)

This warning of death is speaking about the Spirit in Adam and Eve. We know this because after the first sin they did not die physically. They still could think with the mind and control their body. But their fellowship in the Spirit was severed and God kicked them out of the Garden of Eden and placed angels to guard the tree of life from them. Why? It was an act of God's grace! If they ate from the tree of life, they would be forever in the state of Spiritual death. Instead, God had planned before His creation that Christ Jesus would one day come and restore a person's Spirit

who believed. And Christ Jesus did just that on the cross (Eph 1:4-14, 2 Cor. 5:17-21, Colossians 2).

Since the fall in the garden, the Spirit connection to God was severed. The Spirit became a sinful nature and this drove our MIND thoughts and beliefs. That sinfulness works outwardly into how a person lives. It is a soul that sins and so it is enormously opposed to God. As we all became alive on Earth via physical birth and not as a direct creation as Adam and Eve, this Spiritual part of us all is dead at our very birth. A Spiritual condition no human was ever capable to restore by anything we could do. It is clear from Scripture that “...**all have sinned**, and come short of the glory of God; “ (Romans 3:23) and that “...we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; ...” (Isaiah 64:6).

THE SHEDDING OF BLOOD IS REQUIRED FOR THE REMISSION OF SINS

The Bible is clear that only the shedding of blood can make an atonement for our sins.

*“For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: **for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.**” (Leviticus 17:11 KJV)*

*“For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you. Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry. And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and **without shedding of blood is no remission.**” (Hebrews 9:19-22 KJV)*

Apostle Paul made it very clear that in God's economy of righteousness, the only wages for sin is eternal death (Romans 6:23). The wages for our sins is not good works. No good works will clear our debt of sins against our Holy God Almighty.

If we could do good works to make up for our sins, then why would would God have commanded animal sacrifices under the Old Covenant? Because perfection is required to be righteous with God because God is HOLY and perfectly Righteous. Nothing that we do can restore our Spirit of God from it's fallen state. So God had a plan to redeem our dead Spirit by making it a new creation of God and this happens to whosoever will believe on Jesus as the foretold Christ (John 3:14-18) and His blood atoning sacrifice for all our sins (Hebrews 10:10-14, 1 Cor. 15:1-4). Scripture tells us that God has prepared a human body with His own Spirit alive in it to be a final, once for all, blood atonement for all sins of the whole world.

*“Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, **but a body hast thou prepared me:**” (Hebrews 10:5 KJV)*

Did the animal blood sacrifices forgive the peoples sins?

*“For the law having **a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.** For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. But in those sacrifices there is **a remembrance again made of sins every year.** For it is **not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should **take away sins.****” (Hebrews 10:1-4 KJV)*

The animal sacrifices did not take away the sins from the people under the Old Covenant but it was all done as *a remembrance* for how severe the punishment for sinning is and that one day the Messiah would come and be the final blood sacrifice to atone for our sins forever.

GOD PLANNED FOR EVERYTHING BY HIS GRACE TO SAVE ALL WHO WILL BELIEVE ON CHRIST CRUCIFIED , DIED AND RISEN

Remember that God is not like us. He existed before the universe was even created. He has no beginning or ending. Some ask who created God? The question makes no sense really because the creator cannot have been created. He is the one who created everything, even Jesus Christ, who is the creator of the universe and everything we know.

"All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. " (John 1:3 KJV)

It is hard for us to grasp but God exists in every moment of time as the present. God exists outside of time because He created time, you see. To God, He is the great "I AM". The NOW. To Him all time is now. He is the Alpha and Omega, the first and the last. God purposed that His only begotten Son would be the final blood sacrifice for all sin and would restore all whosoever believeth on Him to be eternally born again in the Spirit. To be with Him forever. And He purposed this from the foundation of the world.

*"According as he hath chosen us in him **BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein **HE HATH MADE US** accepted in the beloved. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;" (Ephesians 1:4-7 KJV)*

*"For as much as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; **But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: Who verily was FOREORDAINED BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD, but was manifest in these last times for you,...**" (1 Peter 1:18-20 KJV)*

Before the world was even created. Before humankind was created. God knows it all because He is outside of time as the creator of time. God foreknew EVERYTHING that will happen within the time He created. He foreknew Adam would fall and that we would be lost. And so, before He created the construct of time we live within, He already had a plan to save all who would be born and would believe on Him for righteousness instead of relying on themselves in self righteousness. God pre-planned Jesus, the Messiah and Christ to one day, at God's appointed time, to be the once for all, final blood atoning sacrifice for the sins of the whole world.

God predetermined to choose a people to bring about salvation for all who would believe on Him. First, this was through His chosen people, the Jewish peoples. Because they were perfect in His sight? No. Just the opposite. Yet, He choose an imperfect people to bring salvation to the world through the Messiah to come. God sent His Law through Moses so that people would see how sinful they are against the Holy God of the universe. A remembrance of our sins and that we cannot pay for our sins ourselves but only by belief of the one to come; the Messiah Jesus , the Christ.

*“Moreover the law entered, **that the offence might abound.** But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:” (Romans 5:20 KJV)*

*“The sting of death is sin; and the **STRENGTH OF SIN IS THE LAW.** But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.” (1 Corinthians 15:56-57 KJV)*

*“Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: **for by the law is the KNOWLEDGE OF SIN.**” (Romans 3:20 KJV)*

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST, OUR HIGH PRIEST

Jesus is our high priest today as not a foreshadowing high priest of the Old Covenant but as the real High Priest of the New Everlasting Covenant that has come through His shed blood on the cross, paying for all sins of the whole world (1 John 2:2), ONCE FOR ALL (Hebrews 10:10-14). All the Old Covenant points to Jesus the Lord. And Jesus who was without sin, took our sin upon Himself and bore the punishment on the cross, once for all and cried out, IT IS FINISHED. Our sin debts all paid in full.

*“When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **IT IS FINISHED**: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost. “ (John 19:30 KJV)*

When we look at this phrase *it is finished* in the Greek it reads even clearer what it is that is finished. This phrase in Strongs Greek Concordance is *tel-eh'-o*; from G5056; *to end, i.e. complete, execute, conclude, discharge (a debt):—accomplish, make an end, expire, fill up, finish, go over, pay, perform*. The phrase means, "It is finished, paid in full." An accounting term regarding paying a debt in full. Christ satisfied God's justice by dying for all, to pay for the sins of the the whole world to whosoever believes on Christ for righteousness and not our works. These sins can never be punished again since that would violate God's justice. Sins can only be punished once, either by a substitute or by yourself.

As an analogy, in a court of Law today, if a person owes a great debt and cannot not repay their debts, the giver of the loan can take them to court who will judge by the Law. If the person cannot pay they will be found guilty by the judge and they will be punished. If another person decides to gift this guilty party by paying the debt in full for them, they are freed from the penalty of the judge. The debt was fully paid back and they can walk in freedom knowing the loan giver cannot bring them to court over what has already been paid in full.

We are all in debt to God because all sin **MUST BE** paid for. This is because God is perfectly just. We are all guilty before God. Worse yet, we cannot pay for the wages of our sin to walk in freedom because the wages of our sin is eternal death – not our good works (Romans 6:23). So here we are, every one of us, unable to pay, servants of sin. Lucky for us that our God is perfect in mercy and love! He send His only begotten Son, who is God in human flesh (John 1), to live a perfect life as fully human and fully God, who never sinned and fulfilled all the Law of Moses to willingly and purposefully pay for all sin of the whole world (1 John 2:2)

on the cross. He died and rose again. Jesus stepped into the eternal courtroom of God and paid our debt, freeing us from the penalty of our lifetime of sins forever. By this we are fully forgiven all and any sins we commit in our life. By His rising again, He raised up us with Christ forever in our new Spirit. So amazing a FREE GIFT is our salvation. Free to us but paid dearly by our Lord and Saviour Jesus, the Christ. God deems all who believe on Christ alone in Faith, apart from our works of the Law or our *'good deeds'* in life, as the very righteousness of God Himself. Something so many Christians have not come to understand.

*"For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might **BE MADE the righteousness of God in him.**" (2 Cor. 5:21 KJV)*

A person who does not trust in their own works in any way but in Christ and HIS FINISHED WORK to redeem us is now, present tense, in the Spirit, already in eternal union with Christ; rose from spiritual death to life eternal in the Spirit by the foreknowledge of God (Eph. 1:1-14).

*"For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And **ye are complete in him**, which is the head of all principality and power: In whom also **ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands**, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh **by the circumcision of Christ:***

***Buried with him** in baptism, wherein also **ye are risen with him** through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, **having forgiven you all trespasses**; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that **was against us**, which **was contrary to us**, and **took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross**; And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it." (Colossians 2: 9-15 KJV)*

DOES A BELIEVER NEED TO FOLLOW THE OLD COVENANT LAW TO REMAIN SAVED?

This is the topic of discussion among many Christian groups and it is very important to get the true and Biblical answer to the question. We must realize what this question is really asking and the side you land on for the answer is vital to salvation. It is really the difference between salvation in belief on the full sufficiency of Christ crucified to pay for all sins of the whole world, or unbelief in the complete sufficiency of Christ's act on the cross. There is no half grey belief. It is one or the other.

THIS QUESTION IS THE DIVIDING LINE OF REAL BELIEF UNTO ETERNAL SALVATION AND APOSTACY

So important to understand is the relationship between good works and justification that Apostle Paul wrote extensively on this. He gave simple statements to be as clear as possible about the answer to this question. Let's use human logic for a moment using Scripture statements of truth.

i.) Jesus paid for all sins of the whole world on the cross:

"And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world." (1 John 2:2 KJV)

Looking at this in Strongs Greek concordance we see the word 'propitiation' is G2434, 'hilasmos', defined as atonement, i.e. (concretely) an expiator: '. The Biblical usage for this word is *the means of appeasing*, as in a finished propitiation. This is why Christ called out on the cross, *'It is finished.'* He 100% appeased the Father in

full sufficiency as payment for all sin. We notice also in this verse of Scripture that John states that this propitiation for the sin is not only for the believers on Christ. That is, Christ paid for ALL SINS of the entire world. Does that mean everyone is born again and a child of God? The answer is clearly no and the answer to the question why, is because God gives free will to each person to either accept this free gift payment for sin or to reject the gift. God wants real relationship with humankind. He did not create us as robots but as an image of Himself and free will is part of that. So God offers Christ Crucified, died and risen as a gift to each person. He will honour your decision. Jesus made this clear promise in John 3:18 stating,

"He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God." (John 3:18 KJV)

Jesus allowed the cross event to happen to Him in order to redeem all of humankind who would accept the free gift of salvation. In order to offer the gift, allowing for each individual's free will choice, In order to offer the free gift, He had to first pay for all sins of the whole world, even knowing who will ultimately believe and who would ultimately reject the gift. Remember God is the Alpha and Omega.

As a gift offer, it is not worked for but can only be accepted in belief on Christ, or rejected in unbelief of what Christ did for us all. Rejecting such an enormous gift of God's love and grace, when Jesus suffered so much to pay our sin debts, is the same sin of Lucifer when he fell in rebellion against God. It is the belief that we are in control of everything and that in pride, we think we are good enough to meet the demand of the most Holy of all beings, God Himself. That is a big mistake my friends! Not believing on Christ, means you will remain with your sin debt and one day, you will have to pay for your sins *yourself* with eternal death

(Romans 6:23). Hell was created for the devil and his angels, not for you! But if you reject salvation through Christ, you have sided in pride with the devil and you will end up where he is going! God forbid ! Accept salvation by belief on Christ. The biggest and best decision of your life, with eternal consequences.

Christ paid for all sin and that means you and my future sins as well, because all sins are future from the cross event from our perspective in time.

ii) Going Back To The Law Of Moses To Remain Righteous Is Very Wrong!

Please understand the difference between having good works after salvation and believing that these good works are keeping us righteous. Apostle Paul tells us that salvation is not by good works of the Law, nor ourselves in any manner but is instead by grace through faith on Christ. Now after that moment of belief on Christ, we are born again in the Spirit and eternally saved. Because we are made a new creation in the Spirit by God (2 Cor. 5:17-21), our mind starts to be renewed over time. With great gratitude we should have good works in love for others as Christ loved us. Paul does not though state that these good works after salvation are what keep us saved.

*“For **by grace are ye saved through faith**; and that **not of yourselves**: it is the **gift of God: Not of works**, lest any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus **unto good works**, which God hath before ordained that we **should** walk in them.” (Ephesians 2:8-10 KJV)*

*“In whom ye also are builded together for **an habitation of God through the Spirit**.” (Ephesians 2:22 KJV)*

Read Galatians 3 and you will see quickly that Paul is very clear. He calls it foolish to believe, as already saved and born again in the Spirit people, that we should go back to following works of the Law *to remain righteous*, as if we have anything to do with it! In fact, we see many Scriptures written by Paul stating this very truth. Some believe we are still under the law to keep being the righteousness of God as Christians. This is false according to New Covenant scripture. We are sealed in eternal Salvation from the moment of belief on Christ by God's GRACE. (John 3:18, Eph. 1:13-14, Eph. 2:8-9, Galatians 3,) Our Spirit is present tense, COMPLETE IN CHRIST and SEATED WITH CHRIST. (Colossians 2, Ephesians 2:6)

*"Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, **grace did much more abound.**" (Romans 5:20 KJV)*

"For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace." (Romans 6:14 KJV)

*"Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become **DEAD TO THE LAW** by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which **WERE BY THE LAW**, did work in our members to bring forth fruit UNTO DEATH. But now we are **DELIVERED FRO THE LAW**, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter."
(Romans 7:4-6 KJV)*

*"The sting of death is sin; and the **STRENGTH OF SIN IS THE LAW**. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ." (1 Cor. 15:56 KJV)*

*"Knowing that a man is **NOT JUSTIFIED BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW**, but by the faith OF Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith OF CHRIST, and **NOT BY WORKS OF THE LAW: for by the works of the law shall NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED.**" (Galatians 2:16 KJV)*

*"...would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so **FOOLISH?** having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. 5 He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the **HEARING OF FAITH?** Even as Abraham believed God, and it was **ACCOUNTED TO HIM** for righteousness." (Galatians 3:2-6 KJV)*

*"Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster **TO BRING US UNTO CHRIST**, that we might be **JUSTIFIED BY FAITH**. But after that faith is come, we are **NO LONGER UNDER a schoolmaster.**" (Galatians 3:24-25 KJV)*

*"But if the **ministration OF DEATH**, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away: 8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? 9 For if the **MINISTRATION OF CONDEMNATION** be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory." (2 Cor. 3:7-9 KJV)*

WARNINGS ABOUT NOT BELIEVING IN THE COMPLETE SUFFICIENCY OF CHRIST'S BLOOD ATONEMENT FOR SIN, APART FROM OUR GOOD WORKS

Jesus warned sternly and was clear that good works of the Law cannot save us. Even using the power that is in Jesus' name and having many wonderful good works will bring a person to the judgment seat at the Great White Throne when all unbelievers will be condemned. In Matthew 7 Jesus said,

*"Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done **MANY WONDERFUL WORKS**? And then will I profess unto them, **I NEVER KNEW YOU: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.**" (Matthew 7:21-23 KJV)*

And what is the WILL OF THE FATHER Jesus is talking about here? Well, Jesus tells us in John 6,

"And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day." (John 6:40 KJV)

Jesus is clear that resting in good works is actually the same sin of the devil; PRIDE. It is unbelief in the sufficiency of Christ's **once for all payment** for sins forever (Hebrews 10:10), which is actually unbelief by trying to add our own good works to save ourselves.

In Galatians 1, we see that Judiazers crept into the church in Galatia, teaching to add god works of the Law to remain being salved. Paul's response is a clear warning,

"Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;) And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia: Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

*But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, **let him be accursed**. As we said before, so say I now again, if any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, **let him be accursed.**" (Galatians 1:1-9 KJV)*

Paul says those teaching such heresy is to be accursed. He mention this twice to emphasize how serious this wrong belief is. Adding work of the Law to

remain saved is not done by grace through faith as Paul taught in Ephesians 2:8-9. A work is earned and so, they are teaching that Christ's blood sacrifice atonement for all sin on the cross was not sufficient enough and that we need to add our own works to it to remain saved. GOD FORBID! That is pure heresy full of pride and boasting, **in unbelief** on Christ for salvation. Paul writes,

*"Christ is become of **NO EFFECT UNTO YOU**, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are **FALLEN FROM GRACE**. For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of **righteousness BY FAITH**." (Galatians 5:4-5 KJV)*

This is not where we want to be as believers. We need to believe in God's promise to the Old Testament Saints, and to us today after the cross event. We need to believe in the once for all sufficiency of Christ's payment for our sins. Our works of the Law never saved anyone under the Old Covenant nor under the New Covenant. Belief on the finished work of Christ crucified, died and risen, without works required is the true Gospel of salvation.

THE BOOK OF HEBREWS

Although no one knows who the writer of Hebrews is, I believe it was the Apostle Paul by the writing style. That is something you can decide for yourself. Whether it is Paul or someone else, the message is clearly the same as Paul taught. In Hebrews 10, we can see the truth very clearly. The animal sacrifices under the Old Covenant and Law were only a foreshadowing, a covering of the people's sins year after year until the Messiah, the Christ, would one day come and be the final payment for our sins.

*“For the law **having a shadow of good things to come**, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.*

For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins.

*But in those sacrifices there **is a remembrance again made of sins every year.***

For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me: In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure.” (Hebrews 10:1-6 KJV)

The Animal sacrifices were for a remembrance for the people of how terrible sin is against God. A way to make sure they remember the promise that one day the Messiah would come and be the final payment for all sins. They needed to believe this to keep righteous. A remembrance year after year. Jesus is that Messiah who came 2000 years ago. Jesus is that Christ who came and paid for the sins in His shed blood on the cross as so many Old Testament Prophecies foretold.

*“Then said I, Lo, I come **(in the volume of the book it is written of me,)** to do thy will, O God. Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.” (Hebrews 10:7-10 KJV)*

In the volume of the book written of me where? Well, in the Torah, our Old Testament today. Here we see that Jesus had come just as the Old Testament Torah prophecies and promises by God were made. And these prophecies were very specific I might add!

The list of the Old Testament prophecies fulfilled regarding the birth, life, death and resurrection of Jesus the Christ is an overwhelming proof that the Bible is the true word of the true God. Here are just some of the amazing prophecies fulfilled in Jesus' life and death:

He would be born of a virgin.

Old Testament: Isaiah 7:14,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 1:18-23

He would come from the tribe of Judah, one of the 12 tribes descended from Jacob.

Old Testament: Genesis 49:10,

New Testament fulfillment: Luke 3:23-24

He would be born in Bethlehem.

Old Testament: Micah 5:2,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 2:1

He would be preceded by a messenger.

Old Testament: Isaiah 40:3,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 3:1-2

He would enter Jerusalem riding on a colt.

Old Testament: Zechariah 9:9,

New Testament fulfillment: Luke 19:35-37

He would be betrayed by a friend.

Old Testament: Psalm 41:9,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 26:47-50

He would be sold for 30 pieces of silver.

Old Testament: Zechariah 11:12,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 26:15

He would be beaten and spit upon.

Old Testament: Isaiah 50:6,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 26:67

He would be wounded and whipped by his enemies.

Old Testament: Isaiah 53:5,

New testament fulfillment: Matthew 27:26

His hands and feet would be pierced.

Old Testament: Psalm 22:16,

New testament fulfillment: Luke 23:33

He would be crucified with thieves.

Old Testament: Isaiah 53:12,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 27:38

Men would cast lots for his clothing.

Old Testament: Psalm 34:20,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 27:35

He would not answer, or speak, to His accusers.

Old Testament: Isaiah 53:7,

New Testament fulfillment: Matthew 27:12-14

He would live again after dying.

Old Testament: Job 19:25,

New Testament fulfillment: John 2:19, Matthew 12:39, 16:3

Mind you, this is only just a very small sample! In fact, scholars say there are at least 250 or more Prophecies that Christ fulfilled from Old Testament Prophecies.

OLD TESTAMENT SCRIPTURES PROVING OUR WORKS CANNOT SAVE US

*“He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: **for the transgression of my people was he stricken.**”
(Isaiah 53: 7-8 KJV)*

Here we see another prophecy of the Christ to come and what would happen to him. And this came to pass exactly as foretold. And the last verse shows that those living under the Old Covenant, knew that He would be stricken, for the transgressions (sin) of the people. This shows the way of salvation then is the same as today. Belief on Christ crucified for our sins.

“Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.” (Habakkuk 2:4 KJV)

When we read the just shall live by faith, the word live is in reference to eternal life. Apostle Paul quoted this in the writing to the Galatian church in reference to salvation without works added. Remember that Paul was known as Saul and he was a pharisee at one time and knew the Torah enormously well. Paul wrote that the wages of sin is eternal death in Romans 6:23. This life is life eternal and it is only attained by faith and full assurance in Christ Crucified died and risen.

“After these things the word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. And Abram said, Lord God, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And Abram said, Behold, to me thou hast given no seed: and, lo, one born in my house is mine heir.

*And, behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but **he that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir.** And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be. **And he believed in the Lord; and he counted it to him for righteousness.** “ (Genesis 15:6 KJV)*

God showed Abraham what was going to happen with a Messiah to come from his blood line. And we see that Abraham was also shown that belief in this coming Messiah is the way to become righteous as well. *“And he believed God; and he counted it to him for righteousness”*. Apostle Paul actually quoted this in his writings in Galatians 3:6, in teaching the way of salvation that is not by works required.

“Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile.” (Psalm 32:1-2 KJV)

David really was a man before his time. He understood God and the promise made for the Messiah to come. He believed in righteousness by imputation from the Lord.

“For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: “ (Job 19:25 KJV)

Job shows an understanding that a redeemer is to come and be the one to pay for sins. He knew the promise of the Kingdom Age on Earth to come when the Messiah Christ Jesus would stand on the Earth at His Second Coming. This knowledge had been passed down to him.

“But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. “ (Isaiah 64:6 KJV)

Isaiah realized that our works cannot save us. Even the most righteous good works we do cannot erase our sin debt.

Salvation in Old Testament times was the same as today; it is by faith in the Messiah who became the final sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. The only difference I can see between Old Testament salvation and New Testament salvation is those living before the cross had to believe on the Messiah to come until their death. The Holy Spirit did not permanently indwell them at the moment they believed like it is for us living after the cross in the Church Age of Grace (Eph 1:13-14) because Christ had already come when we were born on Earth. And once the Church Age believers are Harpazo / Raptured off Earth and God turns to save remnant Israel, this will revert back to the Holy Spirit working as He did in Old Testament times. They will need to endure the persecution of Antichrist in belief on Christ until their death or Christ's Second Coming Event to start the Kingdom Age.

BACK TO HEBREWS AGAIN...

*“But this man, after he had offered **ONE SCARIFICE FOR SINS FOR EVER** sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.*

*For **BY ONE OFFERING he HATH PERFECTED FOREVER** them that are sanctified. Whereof the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before,*

*This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; **And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.***

*Now where remission of these is, there is **no more offering for sin.***

*Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; And having an high priest over the house of God; **Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith**, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.*

Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)

*And let us consider one another to provoke **unto** love and to good works:*

Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.” (Hebrews 10 KJV)

The point is clear. Jesus came as the ONE and ONLY, who provided the one sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. A once for all payment for all sin. And because of this all who believe can come boldly to the throne of God as a member

of the family having been MADE PERFECT (verse 14) in the Spirit. And because of this we are to have *full assurance in faith* of our eternal state and our righteousness imputed to us by Christ (Also seen in 2 Cor. 5:21, Colossians 2).

Notice there are no good works by us required here; just full assurance in full belief on Christ and HIS finished work on the cross and rising again. This passage states UNTO good works and this is just as Paul stated in Eph 2. 8-10, save by grace through the faith of Christ, *unto good works* because we have been made by God the righteousness of God, in Christ.

Adding our own good works to remain saved is unbelief in the sufficiency of Christ's payment for sins which God foreordained as the only way to gain salvation. The writer now goes to warn those professing Hebrews as believers, but want to go back to adding good works of the Law with animal sacrifices as a requirement of salvation. A warning that they were adversaries of Christ! It is pure unbelief.

*“For if we SIN wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, **there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins**, But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour **the adversaries**. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, **who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?***

For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people.

It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.” (Hebrews 10:26-31 KJV)

The first thing about this passage is to read it in the context of all Hebrews 9 and 10. The second is the **WILLFUL SIN** is not plural. It is singular. This sin is the sin of UNBELIEF by going back to animal sacrifices as a way to be saved. It is the complete opposite of the Gospel of Grace through Christ Crucified died and risen! These are unbelievers acting like they are believers. Jesus blood sacrifice was completely sufficient and the New Covenant replaced the Old Covenant (Hebrews 10:9)!

If we go back to Hebrews 4 we see the thing the writer wants us to fear and it is not having enough good works to remain saved. It is the opposite. It is the one thing a believer must truly believe to be born again and it is not good works. Showing as an example for the Hebrews, and us today, the writer explains what happened during the Exodus when the promised land was to be given as Moses led them out of Egypt slavery, across the parting of the red sea, miracle food manna from Heaven on their journey etc. Very miraculous things God had done for them! Yet, in the end most did not believe God will give them the promised land because of Earthly hardship on their journey. This led them to wandering in the wilderness for 40 years until that generation died out. They never seen the promised land; only their offspring did. It is a warning of what we should fear; unbelief in God's promise of resting in faith in Him and His finished work on the cross with full assurance apart from our works.

Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it. For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.” (Hebrews 4:1-4 KJV)

The freed slave Hebrews came short of full assurance and belief of the promised land. And this is what some of the Hebrews were doing again as well as we read in the Book of Hebrews. They knew the way of salvation and called themselves believers, yet they came short of full assurance and belief on Christ alone by grace through faith. They never came to full belief on Christ and acceptance of the great free gift of salvation through belief on Christ alone, without works required. In the end, some of these showed themselves to not actually be believers. They denied the complete sufficiency of Christ Jesus' once for all blood sacrifice for the sins of the whole world.

That is why "*there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins*". If they know the way of salvation but in the end they do not believe on Christ alone and the New Covenant He shed His blood for, then what do they have left regarding their sins? Just "*a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.*" They are trusting in themselves to be righteous just as the devil did and they have become an adversary just as satan is to believers and the Lord. In the end, they knew the way of salvation and may have even believed they were born again but in reality, they were unbelievers.

WARNING! THE FALSE TEACHING OF WORKS REQUIRED TO BE SAVED IS RAMPANT TODAY FROM CHURCH DENOMINATIONS AND PULPITS AND TELEVANGELISTS.

Believing on works required for salvation is the end times Apostasy Apostle Paul warned about. Today they use terms and names such as Lordship Salvation. You will hear things like,

'Jesus paid for your sins but if you do this one sin afterward, it is a mortal sin and unforgiveable.'

'You need to confess your sins to a priest for forgiveness.'

'No one can be certain of salvation. '

'You must obey a set of extra-Biblical rules to receive and keep their salvation. '

' You must repent of every sin after salvation or you will lose salvation'

' You must be water baptized to be saved.'

'You need good works after salvation to remain saved or you can lose salvation'

'Will You Make Your commitment To Christ To Be Saved?'

All of these are false Gospel and not found in the Bible when verses are read in proper context regarding salvation.

Let this not be you! Believe with full assurance in Christ's blood sacrifice and death and rising again (1 Cor. 15:1-4, John 3:16) and live forever with our loving Father and Jesus Christ The Lord. His sacrifice was completely sufficient to save all whosoever will believe on Him. Live out your life with good works in love of others but never think these good works are keeping you saved in pride.

Section III

After Your

Salvation

Chapter 14

Can A Person Lose Their Salvation?

*“For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, **and believeth on him**, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.” (John 6:38-40 KJV)*

- With Love, Jesus Christ

The question of whether a person can lose their Salvation is a constant debate these days it seems. The reason is always Bible Scriptures read and taken out of proper context. A person can take any one liner of Scripture and ignore all the other Scriptures in the same book, and in other books, and make that one verse to mean something entirely wrong. Sometimes a person, pastor or Bible teacher will take what they believe and read that into verses ignoring proper context. This is not the way to study the Bible. We humans are way too flawed to do that! What we need to be doing is reading the whole book(s) of the Bible in proper context and understand that the Scriptures have NO CONTRADICTIONS. I can hear some of you thinking to yourself, “WHAT?! There are lots of contradictions”. Well, again I tell you that there really are no contradictions – *only misinterpretations*. And with some of the new Bible translations being so flawed in the translating it has caused even more confusion. We need to get back to the basics of Bible Study. Believe there are no contradictions because it is the word of GOD.

In proper context, the Bible is very clear that Salvation is not something we can *earn* through our own self efforts in a belief of self righteousness as if we can do anything to eradicate our sins. You know there is only one way to get to Heaven and not hell; have all the sin debt of your life punished and paid in full. It only takes ONE sin and you are disqualified from entering Heaven and are instead headed for the wrath of God. That is Bible truth. This is because God is perfectly Holy and has a Holy hatred for sin. God is also perfectly JUST and so He must punish you for your sins. The worst thing about this is that the punishment for sinning *even just once* is an eternal separation from the love of God in a place of torment known as hell.

We humans are an interesting lot. We have this thing called *pride* and it has caused us a whole lot of grief, pain and suffering as we hold on to the belief that we are able *to be good*. You see, we seem to find it easy to compare ourselves with other fellow humans and say to ourselves that, '*I am a better person than that adulteress sinner.*' Yes, adultery is a very bad sin right? Did you know that Jesus said,

*"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever **looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.**"*
(Matthew 5:27-28 KJV)

Just how serious is our *sinful nature*? Jesus puts explains just how wicked we really are and how serious our sin problem from deep within our heart is when He said,

*"And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and **not that***

*thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that **thy whole body should be cast into hell.**" (Matthew 5:29-30 KJV)*

You can see how serious our sin problem really is. It is not about externals. It is not just about what we do. It is about our *sinful bent* from deep within our very hearts. Jesus told us that it is not the externals coming into us that defiles us. It is from our very core of our being in our hearts.

*"And he called the multitude, and said unto them, **Hear, and understand:** Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but **that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.**" (Matthew 15:10-11 KJV)*

What comes out of our mouth is always from our very heart and our core self. Sin is such a horrible disease. And sin really is like a disease. A disease we are born with! We are born with a sin nature. Just look at any child's actions and you will learn quickly that this sinful bent is in us all! There is also NOTHING we can do ourselves to eradicate the sins we have committed against the people in our lives and ultimately against our Holy God Almighty. Any goodness we believe we have is based on comparing it with other people, other people that sin more than you do. But whatever good you do to make up for your sins will not forgive the sins you already committed. The problem is our core being is sinful and so, we sin. Anyone that denies they have sinned are flat out liars (this applies to saved believers too). It is a desperate situation we are all in. You see in God's perfect righteousness He sees us as sinners to the core.

*“For **all have sinned**, and **come short** of the glory of God; “ (Romans 3:23 KJV)*

*“But we are all as **an unclean thing**, and **all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags**; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. “ (Isaiah 64:6 KJV)*

Thank God that He not only is perfectly Holy and Perfectly Just but that God is also perfectly loving and perfectly merciful! We need to know that God wants a real relationship with us. Not a one sided relationship where He forces us to commune with Him. God did not create us as robots. We have a free will and that free will is VERY important to God. He gives you the choice to be with Him forever, or to choose as Satan and his fallen angels to rebel and be cast into an eternal separation from Him.

THE GIFT...TO BE RECEIVED

Salvation is *a gift to be received* and not of our own self efforts. Jesus already completed the task of paying for the sins you committed in the past, the present and your future. But you must BELIEVE in Christ and the atonement for your sins that He provided with His shed blood on the cross. And by believe, this includes accepting and receiving this FREE GIFT of Salvation and forgiveness of your sins. If you believe Jesus is the Son of God, born of the virgin Mary, was crucified, died and was buried and rose again on the third day and that on that cross He paid your debt of sins with His shed blood than you have been saved and you are eternally secured and sealed with the Holy Spirit from that moment, and forever and ever! You did NOTHING of your own efforts to accomplish your Salvation. NADA! ZIPPO! Except one, *believe and accept* the pardon for your sins

through Christ Jesus! It is through God's unmerited favour and grace through faith alone, in Christ's act of atonement alone!

*“For by GRACE are ye saved **THROUGH FAITH**; and that **NOT of yourselves**: it is **the GIFT of God: NOT OF WORKS**, lest any man should boast.” (Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)*

If the Bible and Gospel is so clear on this than why do some teach that Salvation can be lost? The reason is misinterpreting Scriptures, using Scripture verses out of the context intended by the text and believing the Bible contains contradictions. None of these are the correct way to study the Bible. And do not think I am perfect in this regard either. We are all flawed and have this sin nature within us. We are weak, God is strong. However, when you know the fundamentals of the Gospel through Paul, and the other Apostles including James, it is very clear that Salvation is not of works. There are many other passages of Scriptures that people get hung up on in regards to whether we can lose Salvation but I will go through just a few to show you the truth.

HEBREWS 6:4-6: DO NOT REVERT BACK

Some teach that Hebrews 6 tells us that a believer Can lose their Salvation – after being forgiven and saved by Christ’s atonement. Those that claim this are not trying to mislead anyone but they are misinterpreting Hebrews 6, and not looking closely at the context. Context with Scriptures and knowing that ALL Scriptures are 100% correct with no inconsistencies or contradictions is key to full understanding of the Gospel.

Instead, some take this one Scripture in Hebrews, at verse 4-6, as meaning there is no eternal security for the believer, and seem to ignore all the other Bible Scriptures and words of Jesus Himself that tell us the opposite. Some will then add that we need works for salvation – taking the heart of the Gospel message out.

Hebrews is addressing, well, Jews. Hebrews 5 and 6 is addressing Jews who have become Christians yet have not progressed at all other than being saved by belief in the atonement of sins provided once and for all by Jesus Christ on the cross.

It is addressing the fact that these believing Jews have not progressed at all and that this needs to change. If we go back to Chapter 5 it helps us to see Chapter 6 in the proper context. Remember they did not write in chapters. Chapters were added to the Bible for the readers benefit.

*“And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec. Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, **seeing ye are dull of hearing**. For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as **have need of milk, and not of strong meat**. For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.” (Hebrews 5:9-14 KJV)*

There is nothing wrong with being a babe in the faith. That is, to be a new Christian just starting the journey of learning about God and His ways. However, here we see that it has been quite a while since they first believed and they should be at a level of understanding so they could teach others. Instead, they are still as

babes and unskillful in the faith. These are the people being addressed in Hebrews Chapter 5 and 6.

If one were to read ONLY Hebrews 6:4-5 they would get the totally wrong context of these Chapters. And it could seemingly be interpreted as losing your salvation. And that is why some are telling others they can lose their salvation in Christ –which is totally false and not in proper context of the book in Hebrews 6.

Such people are babes in the faith still and do not even grasp the context using the first three verses of Hebrews 6. They just hand pick the one verse which alone, out of context, fits what *they believe*; that a person can lose their Salvation. Here is Hebrews 6 as described in verses 1-3 which is the context of the verses to follow and is all about the peril of not progressing in the faith of Christ:

“Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit.” (Hebrews 6:1-3 KJV)

This is all about the Hebrew believers in Christ and that they have reverted back to doing the religious works they once did under the law. They reverted to trying to work their way back to God. But salvation is NOT of works of any kind as we see in so many passages of Scripture regarding the Gospel of Christ (Ephesians 2:8-9, 1 Timothy 2: 5-6, Romans 4:4-5, Galatians 2:16-21, Galatians 2:16-21 and many many more!). Instead of increasingly learning faith in Christ and living that out, they are still as babes and have even reverted back to the rituals of the Jewish faith.

The books of Galatians, Ephesians, Colossians, Romans and other Scriptures all show us that this not so and that it is Christ plus nothing that MAKES

us saved. Salvation is a GIFT, without works to gain it. It is the GIFT from God to all that Believe that Christ is the Lord and Savior.

These believers are babes in the faith that did not mature to start enjoying the freedom in the law of liberty in Christ. Jesus sets us free. What they were doing by going back to the Jewish rituals, such as slaying a lamb to atone for their sins was a VERY wrong thing to do! That was just a foreshadowing of what the Messiah would do and what Jesus Christ fulfilled in it's entirety on the cross when He cried out *"IT IS FINISHED!"* Doing so, is like saying to God that His sacrifice, which is once for all, is not sufficient. And that is what some are saying by telling others a person can lose their salvation. God forbid! Stop doing that! Hebrews states,

"For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame." (Hebrews 6:4-6 KJV)

This is talking about how these people need to stop *"crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame."* They need to stop falling away to the old rituals of the law and at the same time saying they need Christ. NO, Christ fulfilled the law and replaced the law of the Ministry of death and condemnation with the Ministry of righteousness and liberty in Christ (2 Corinthians 3:7-9). They need to start on milk again and learn the truth of the Gospel message. And then hold fast to the truth. Otherwise, they risk losing rewards at the Bema seat judgment of believers after the Rapture.

MATTHEW 7:22-23: BEWARE FALSE PROPHETS

“Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.” (Matthew 7:23 KJV)

Have you had other Christians tell you that this Scripture is about your need to not sin in order to be truly saved? And that “work iniquity” in this Scripture means SIN – ALL TYPES of SIN?

The Gospel of the GRACE of God is Faith in the atonement provided by Jesus the Christ PLUS NOTHING. Such people trying to tell people that their sin, even after becoming born again in the Spirit, will mean they will loose their salvation are taking this verse out of context. They leave out the preceding verses and WHO Jesus is talking about. Let's look at this Scripture in context. In fact, you will soon see that the very thing they are teaching about this Scripture is actually the exact opposite meaning when read in proper context of the preceding verses.

*“15 **Beware of false prophets**, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.*

Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.”(Matthew 7:15-23 KJV)

VERSE 15!

Jesus is talking about *false prophets*. They come to you as sheep, as 'Christians'. They come with various verses of Scripture, all taken out of context, to tell you it is your WORKS that matters. They teach about Jesus but it is false teaching. Many of them are sincere because they have not grasped what Paul taught about the Grace of God through Jesus Christ. Others are just plain deceiving others to gain money and increase their religious organization membership. They actually give real believers in Christ's atonement a very bad reputation because they are labelled as 'Christians', when in fact they are not even saved. God has some really harsh and blunt warnings here for such false gospel teachers.

The Scariest Words To Hear From God

It is these false prophets who are the verse 23, *“ye that work iniquity”*. Jesus speaks about the false prophets, and what they are doing wrong? They are thinking and telling others that it is **what they DO** that qualifies them for salvation in Jesus. Verse 22 makes it clear, *“22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?”*

Do you See it? They are saying have not WE, and in thine name WE, done many WORKS. WE WE WE! They rely on their own ability to please God and by doing such think they are saved. Is this real saving faith? No. What is it then? PRIDE. This is false prophets speaking! And these are the same teachers that use verse 22 and 23 to claim that works are required for salvation. If they would only read the previous verses in proper context.

1 CORINTHIANS 6: DOES SINNING AFTER SALVATION DISQUALIFY YOU FROM HEAVEN?

“Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.” (1 Corinthians 6:9-10 KJV)

There are some who use this verse and say it is talking about believers in Christ and those that are redeemed by the atonement of our sin through Christ on the cross. That if you became saved through faith in Jesus and still commit sin that you are not saved and will not end up in heaven. But is this really the truth?

First you need to understand that the believers in Corinthians led a very carnal life style. In fact, they were the very role model of a church gone very wrong! That said, Paul addresses them as believers and as saved people who were living carnally. It is also interesting that the people professing this leave out the very next verse (11) which is,

*“And such **were** some of you: but ye are WASHED, but ye are SANCTIFIED, but ye are JUSTIFIED in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.” (1 Corinthians 6:11 KJV)*

So you see the focus of verse 9-10 is talking about the unredeemed of Christ. Unbelievers. Those who basically not only sin but those that enjoy it and profess it openly. It is speaking about those who willingly refuse to accept Jesus as their justification and salvation through faith. And the pivoting point is that this is how these people were once. They were headed to judgment and hell as we all are until accepting the gift of Salvation through Christ. In Verse 11, we see the way to avoid hell and be found in Heaven and it is the only way to get to heaven; washed in the shed blood of Christ who took the punishment for the sins of our lives.

AND SUCH WERE SOME OF YOU

Isn't that a key pivotal point to this Scripture? Yes indeed! WE ALL HAVE SINNED! We all have such evil thoughts and intentions. Just a quick read of the Ten Commandments should be a mirror into your sinfulness. Jesus said that even looking at a woman in lust, we have broken a commandment. Not the act of having sex with her.. just lust looking at her in lust. That goes for basically ever type

of sin then. It is our sinful nature that is the object and why we need salvation through Christ.

The truth is we all have varying degrees of sin, some greater than others. But it is the sin nature within and even one sin is enough to disqualify a person from heaven. That is, outside of accepting the pardon for our sin through Jesus Christ's act of atonement, whereby He became our sinful selves and took upon Himself the punishment for the sins of the world, we are lost and part of the group the Bible calls the UNREDEEMED.

"The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good. God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one." (Psalm 53-1-3 KJV)

This is the state of every human being born from the age of accountability *until* a person accepts the atonement of Jesus Christ, the ONLY way back to a right relationship with God. John tells us like this,

*"He that **believeth on him is not condemned**: but **he that believeth not is condemned already**, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God." (John 3:18 KJV)*

Jesus said it as clearly as possible when He said,

"...I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John 14:6 KJV)

In this verse Jesus states '*but by me*'. The English word '*but*' here in the original Greek is the Greek word '*dia*' and it has a meaning of '*through*'. Jesus is saying that no man can come to God the Father except *through Jesus*. Do we sin after accepting Christ? Is it possible to never sin again from that point on? If you sin after salvation, are you no longer saved? John tells us very clearly and simply,

"If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us." (1 John 1:10 KJV)

So do not listen to anyone that tells you, you have to be perfectly sinless after salvation to keep your salvation. No, that is totally incorrect. Salvation is the work of God. It is not something we can *earn* by good works. Look at these Scriptures on this topic and that is VERY evident!

"For by grace you have been saved THROUGH FAITH, and that NOT of yourselves; it is the GIFT of God, NOT OF WORKS, lest anyone should boast. (Ephesians 2:8 KJV)

"Now to the one who works, his wage is not reckoned on the basis of grace, but as what is due. But to the one who does not work, but believes in Him (Jesus) who justifies the ungodly, his faith is reckoned as righteousness." (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)

"So they asked Him, 'What can we do in order to do what God wants us to do? Jesus answered, 'What God wants you to do is to believe in the one He sent.'" (John 6:28-29 KJV)

Even Paul, the writer of 2/3 of the New Testament, the once Christian persecutor, who accepted Christ on the road to Damascus. Paul, the person that gave us the road map of salvation through faith and not works. Paul, who rebuked

even Peter for allowing works into the salvation equation. Paul, Known as one of the greatest of the Apostles. What does the Apostle Paul have to say about this?

*“This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; **of whom I am chief.**” (1 Timothy 1:15 KJV)*

Notice that Paul did not say *'of whom I ONCE was chief'*. NO! Paul writes, *'of whom I AM CHIEF'*. Paul is writing in the *present tense* and not the past tense. Paul had his struggles with sin after Salvation too! We are not to boast about how good we are as believers. We are not to look down upon the unredeemed as if you did something to be saved and you are better than they are as a person. NO! NO! NO!

The redeemed are SINNERS with a saviour, Jesus the Christ. We we REDEEMED at a great cost to God! Jesus shed His blood and died for us in a very horrible manner; with great pain and suffering. He became our sins and took upon Himself the sins of the world and paid the price for our sins. Just as in court a debtor must pay his debts, we as sinners must pay our debt of sin which is eternal death in hell. But thanks be to our God that He sent His only Son, Jesus The Christ to pay our debt HIMSELF to redeem us. Jesus paid that debt on the cross. Now that the debt has been fully paid, we cannot be convicted of that debt ever again! That is why Jesus cried out with a loud voice on the cross, ***“It is finished!”***

Remember context when reading Scriptures. We are here discussing 1 Corinthians 6. But go to 2 Corinthians 5 and see that it reads,

“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath

committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." (2 Corinthians 5:17-21)

AM I SAYING TO KEEP ON SINNING? GOD FORBID!

Does God's grace give us a license to sin? Absolutely not! As the Holy Spirit guides and corrects you, after your salvation, and as the Holy Spirit sanctifies you and renews your mind through the word of God, your world view will start changing. Your belief will change. Your heart will change. Good works will follow (but they are not what saves you... keep a humble attitude). Yes, try not to sin. But when you do fall into a sin or a sinful practice, the Holy Spirit will correct you. Turn to God and ask for help when you blow it. Boast to God about your weaknesses and boast in Christ instead.

"If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us" (1 John 1:10 KJV)

"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments." (1 John 2:1-3 KJV)

"But Jesus went to the Mount of Olives. Now early in the morning He came again into the temple, and all the people came to Him; and He sat down and taught them. Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, "Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act.

Now Moses, in the law, commanded us that such should be stoned. But what do You say?" This they said, testing Him, that they might have something of which to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down and wrote on the ground with His finger, as though He did not hear. So when they continued asking Him, He raised Himself up and said to them, "He who is without sin among you, let him throw a stone at her first." And again He stooped down and wrote on the ground. Then those who heard it, being convicted by their conscience, went out one by one, beginning with the oldest even to the last. And Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had raised Himself up and saw no one but the woman, He said to her, "Woman, where are those accusers of yours? Has no one condemned you?" She said, "No one, Lord." And Jesus said to her, "Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more." (John 8:1-11 KJV)

Our attitude as believers is to *Go and sin no more*. Knowing that Christ no longer condemns you and that you have been purchased and redeemed we should have an attitude to put off our old sinful selves and put on our new nature that is now within us. It is an ongoing struggle to do what is right out of an attitude of gratitude for what Christ went through to redeem us with His blood. Our old sinful nature and our newly given spirit are at war with each other and because we still have our sin nature, we cannot be perfectly without sin until we receive our new immortal bodies. In John 15, Jesus tells us to abide in Christ and abide in His words and then Christ will abide and work through a person as a believer.

After the moment of a person's Salvation they will still face challenges and temptations. God did not take away our free will when we accepted the gift of Salvation. We still have free will right? Decisions still need to be made in regards to right or wrong.

WALKING IN THE SPIRIT VERSES WALKING IN THE FLESH

If we abide in Christ and His words (studying the Bible) and follow Him we are *walking in the Spirit* and the Holy Spirit is renewing your mind and placing desires in your heart to accomplish good works that God has set before us. By *walking in the spirit*, and as we mature in the faith, we are bearing fruit in the lives of others.

When we fall into and give in to a temptation and sin, or when we ignore Godly matters altogether, we are *walking in the flesh* and being carnal minded. Just as the carnal Corinthians believers were, we are still saved and Heaven bound but our lives become less useful for God and for others you are not helping. Our faith becomes withered and dry (John 15), useless and unfruitful. And there are consequences too in this life. If a believer steals and goes to jail, that is a consequence, even though they are still saved. If a believer lives completely carnal, they will end up losing rewards at the Bema judgment seat of Christ. Some will have no rewards but will be saved *as by fire* alone and will weep in shame and regret for all the wasted opportunities they squandered.

Now, '*go and sin no more*' knowing that when we fail and sin, Christ is right there ready to catch us and help us overcome our failures. Look to Jesus for everything. He is EVERYTHING! When you blow it, *and you will*, do not run from God. Instead, run to God and ask Him to help you overcome the temptations and carnal ways of living. He will help you!

SALVATION CANNOT BE LOST IF YOU TRULY REPENTED AND BELIEVE THE GOSPEL

Many scriptures make it clear that salvation is eternal and that a person who accepts Christ act of atonement as a gift, has been eternally secured *in Christ*. Yes,

a person can backslide, but the Holy Spirit will guide the person and persuade them back to right living. The Holy Spirit is constantly changing us and renewing our mind to be more like Christ. And this happens differently for everyone; different levels and speeds for each individual.

All the Scriptures are true, *without contradiction*, though some seem to contradict each other. When that happens, it means we are missing the mark and the proper context. Ask the Holy Spirit to show you the true meaning of such difficult passages. He will in His time.

Here are just a few other Scriptures, and some the words of Jesus Himself, that tell us a believer has true assurance of Salvation *that cannot be lost*. It is a work of God, 100%... not our fleshly efforts and works that save us. Our part is to accept and believe by our will.

"Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:" (Philippians 1:6 KJV)

Here we see the Holy Spirit is perfecting us through our living years until the day we are face to face with Jesus bodily and we become like He is.

*"To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, Who are kept **by the power of God through faith unto salvation** ready to be revealed in the last time." (1 Peter 1:4-5 KJV)*

Jesus said...

*"My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I give unto them **eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.** My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand." (John 10:27-29 KJV)*

*“Now unto **Him** that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,” (Jude 24 KJV)*

Those teaching this false Gospel of losing Salvation also teach faith PLUS works is required for Salvation. It is spreading in online Christian groups as well as in many religious church organizations; those claiming you can lose your Salvation and those that teach faith in Christ *PLUS good works* is required for salvation.

Some are falling for it because they use Scriptures out of context. We must be diligent against such false teaching. The Apostle Paul was given the revelation of the Gospel of grace directly from Christ. Paul wrote 3/4 of the New Testament (most believe he also wrote Hebrews)- think about that one! Read Romans, Galatians, Ephesians and Colossians. It is very clear teaching that being a good person nor doing good works nor performing religious rituals will save a person.

This very same teaching of a false Gospel crept into the Galatians churches – Paul had to address it with them. Paul even rebuked the Apostle Peter over the faith plus works issue. It is very deceptive and does away with the sacrifice of Christ, under the disguise of Biblical Scriptures used out of context.

I get bombarded by these people who think they are saved by works of any kind in Facebook Christian group discussions. It is very disturbing how they are deceiving other Christians (even if they do not realize they are doing so). John 6... Jesus says it very clearly...

“Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye BELIEVE ON HIM whom He hath sent.” (John 6:29 KJV)

“Knowing that a man is NOT JUSTIFIED BY THE WORKS OF THE LAW, BUT BY THE FAITH OF JESUS CHRIST, even we have BELIEVED IN Jesus Christ, that we might BE JUSTIFIED BY THE FAITH OF CHRIST, and NOT by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall NO FLESH BE JUSTIFIED.” (Galatians 2:16 KJV)

And these very same false teachers tell me that I am teaching the false Gospel and they even use Scriptures out of proper context that actually shows how false what they teach as truth really is. They cherry pick verses that fit their belief instead of learning the truth from the Word Of God and believing what it says.

WHAT ABOUT THE BEMA SEAT?

At the Bema Seat Judgment of believers (1 Corinthians 3) by Christ, you can see that believers may lose rewards and gain rewards by their good works for Christ performed after Salvation. However, understand that this Bema Seat Judgment is similar to an athletic competition ceremony. It is not punitive against sins committed because those at this judgment are already Raptured and resurrected with eternal bodies; without the sin nature present.

In fact, the word *sin* or *sins* is not even found regarding this judgment of believers. Their sins on Earth were already judged on the cross in Jesus Christ. The Bema Seat is where Christ will have us give an account of our lives after salvation and is based on our MOTIVES for the works we do for God. God always looks at a persons motives. Those works that were done in the flesh (that is by us attempting to do them for the wrong human reasons) will mean a loss of reward. Those works done with the right motives for God and by the Holy Spirit through you will receive reward. That is, by what we do *and why* we did the works. So yes, it is important to

want to please God and be involved in His work. Yet, even a person who accepted Christ with no good works will still be saved and in heaven, yet with little or no reward (1 Corinthians 3:13). Everyone will suffer some loss of rewards and gain of rewards. Some may not receive a reward and feel some shame about it. But overall the feeling is like that of school graduation or an Olympic rewards ceremony. It is a positive event and all at this Bema Seat event are *already in Heaven* where joy abounds in ways that we cannot yet even comprehend fully right now here on Earth.

IT IS NOT WHAT *YOU* DO. IT IS WHAT *JESUS DID* FOR YOU!

It is what the Holy Spirit does through you after salvation by FAITH. Good works will follow but it is GOD doing them *through us*. It is nothing for us to boast about really is it? Not works by the flesh. Works by the Holy Spirit.

Be diligent to read and know the true Gospel from the Bible alone. Then you can discern false teachers very quickly. Do not believe the false gospels of works and prosperity that is spreading like wildfire in these last days. You cannot lose your Salvation if you believe in the true biblical Gospel of Christ.

Chapter 15

Dead To The Law, Alive Through Grace

If you ask Christ for forgiveness and prayed the prayer of salvation and mean it in your heart; you have been redeemed and are known by God as a *saved person*. Now some believe that from the time of salvation that we are supposed to sin no more and obey the Ten Commandments or we could lose our salvation. This is NOT a biblical teaching though and it is important to understand that once forgiven, you have come under God's grace and you are no longer held accountable under The Law of Moses (Ten Commandments.) In the book of Romans 5, the Apostle Paul made this very clear:

*"Moreover the law entered, that the offence **might abound**. **But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound**: That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord."* (Romans 5:20-21 KJV)

Paul is saying that the Ten Commandments were given to man so that trespass (that is sin) might increase! That is NOT what many are teaching today is it? I remember very well that high school religion class taught me just the opposite of this. In fact, I would say that many in this age, even Christians, believe something very different. Many pulpits are teaching falsely about this as well these days. Most churches are teaching *condemnation* and the need to not sin but ignore the *forgiveness* Jesus provided. So what's up? What is the truth about the Law of God given to Moses and the Grace provided to us through Jesus Christ? It is time to get the real truth from the Bible.

Do we first need to keep the 10 commandments and then God will forgive us ? Or did Jesus pay our sin debt in full? *You cannot have it both ways.* You cannot mix the old covenant (The Law) with the new covenant (Christ's atonement for the sins of the world).

Since the time of Moses and up until the time of Jesus (and yes even until today) the Jewish people have added many other rules and regulations to the 10 Laws. One such law was regarding fasting as we see in Matthew 9, when Jesus was asked, *"How is it that we and the Pharisees fast often, but your disciples do not fast?"* Jesus' reply shows clearly that Jesus has come to *take away* the sins of the world and that there is a *New Covenant* that overrules the Old covenant and the results of the Law given to Moses:

"Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved." (Matthew 9:14-17 KJV)

"For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. " (John 1:17 KJV)

No one has ever kept all of the Ten Commandments (except Jesus Christ). That is why the Jewish High Priest sacrificed animals without blemish once a year to atone for their sins. It was a foreshadowing of when the Messiah would come and be the final sacrifice for all humankind.

Two thousand years ago Jesus came and took upon Himself the punishment for the sins of every person from all of time. It is a gift from God.. A free gift to be received. Of course, it was not free to Jesus as He paid the ultimate price in blood. It is God's grace upon those that receive Christ's atonement as personal Saviour. The Ten Commandments are a mirror that when we look at it, we recognize our sin against a Holy God.

It is interesting to note that the first miracle performed by Moses in Egypt to set the Hebrew slaves free was *turning water into blood*, thus causing illness and death to people. The first miracle mentioned in Scriptures by Jesus is at the wedding in Canaan when He *turned water into wine*, during a wedding celebration: a celebration of new life. It is no coincidence!! When Jesus took our sin punishment on the cross He cried out '***It is finished!***' We are now under *The New Covenant of God's Grace*, an undeserved and unmerited favor. It is nothing that we deserve or that we have because of our good works, nor our own efforts. It is 100% God's free gift to us. It's His loving grace.

GRACE DECLARATION OF GOD

*"This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; **And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.**" (Hebrews 10:16-17 KJV)*

You see, for all that accept His free gift of salvation from our sin debt against God, God does not even remember our sins anymore! It is not that God cannot remember them, but that He is not holding our sins against us anymore.

"For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. " (Romans 6:14 KJV)

Believers are no longer under Law. We are under grace! In fact, the Bible states clearly that teaching people to obey the Ten Commandments as a way to gain God's righteousness and forgiveness is called a '*ministry of death*'. And yet, it is preached so often in the pulpits these days one starts to question if the presenter has read the Bible at all? We need to stop living under the first covenant! Jesus paid a very high price to free us from our prison of sins!

*"But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away: How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious? For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, **much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.**" (2 Corinthians 3:7-9 KJV)*

Now don't misunderstand me. The Law of God given through Moses is Holy and good and true 100%. It is not done away with but remains. It is Holy. However, the point is that *it cannot make you Holy*. James 2:10 declares that if you break just one Law of God, then you broke them all because it only takes one sin to disqualify a person from Heaven if they have not yet received the Gift of Salvation through Christ's atonement. The law is a mirror causing a person to see the truth about how sinful we all *really are*. After all, a look in a mirror can show that you have a grease stain on your forehead you otherwise may not have known about, right?

So many Christians are preoccupied with *our sin* and the *sins of others*. When we sin we can easily think it stops God's grace and we try to make up for the sins by doing good works. This is simply not Biblical. God is not waiting to hit you with a stick when you sin! If you received His free gift of salvation through

Jesus, God does not remember your sin debt anymore because Jesus already paid the debt of sins for the entire world; past, present and future. If you accepted the pardon Christ provided on the cross.. It is 100% finished! Look at 1 Corinthians 15:56-57,

*“The **sting of death is sin**; and **the strength of sin is the law**. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory **through our Lord Jesus Christ**.” (1 Corinthians 15:56-57 KJV)*

There you have it, right from the Word of God. *The Strength of sin is trying to keep The Law!* Satan is using the pulpits of many churches/denominations to fool people and accuse people of their sins and wrong doing and he is teaching the *ministry of death!* The devil is using the Ten Commandments to condemn you.. And accuse you. This is NOT God's way! And not what God is like at all. He has nothing but love for humankind.. He gave His only Son to die for us to escape His own Holy wrath. Is there any greater love than what Christ did on that cross? God is love.

**DO NOT BE DECEIVED BY ANY MAN OR WOMEN, ONE OF THE CLOTH OR
NOT!**

Hear and read the Bible for the truth!

God is teaching people the *New Covenant Of Grace* in these last days. It is time for the redeemed Christians to stand up and get the truth *of the Bible* out. Don't just take every word from a pulpit or someone saying they are Christian telling you to use good works to cover your sins. **It is the biggest lie of the devil himself.** Who do they think they are? They think they are better than you? We are *all sinners* and Christians should not be boasting as if they are clean while others

are not because they do more good works. That is utter non sense! Stop boasting about your good works! They will not save you from your sin debt!!

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.” (Ephesians 2: 8-9 KJV)

“But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. ” (Galatians 6:14 KJV)

*“And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: **for my strength is made perfect in weakness.** Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. ” (2 Corinthians 12:8 KJV)*

Do not boast about how *good a person* you are as a Christian while the *other non-believing people* are evil. Boast about the truth in Christ ONLY as if it is nothing you have accomplished because even as a Christian you too are still a sinner. That is the Biblical truth!

The Bible is not telling us about a God waiting to bash you in the head every time you do something wrong! Nothing is further from the truth. The Bible is God's word showing us how much He loves us. It is the good news of the Gospel of Jesus Christ our Lord unto salvation from the Wrath of God to come upon all sinners who have not accepted the pardon of God!

SALVATION DOES NOT COME THROUGH CONDEMNATION OF OTHERS

Ever hear this taught? *'Salvation comes through condemnation.'* They accuse you of your sins and try to convince you to *'repent'*. Yet, their own ministers

are doing all kinds of evil. This is the times we live in. The last days! But God is moving today and the truth of the Bible is coming alive and *The Gospel of Grace* is spreading like wild fire. Why? Because once people see the truth of Scripture regarding Law verse Grace.. It sets people free.

"For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. " (John 3:17)

Just look at what Jesus DID! Read everything Jesus did and that is how God truly is. In every case you will see that the goodness of God comes *before repentance*. Jesus never condemned a person and said 'go and sin no more'. Instead He said, *"...Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more. " (John 8:11 NKJV)* THAT IS A BIG DIFFERENCE!

Jesus showed people the truth about God. He showed God's GRACE and then the people repented (changed their mind about God and their sin). Jesus healed people and they repented. He saved a women from stoning by her accusers, forgave all her sins and she repented. This is the Gospel! *The Grace of God!* Do not mix the Law with the Grace of God. We are living in the days of God's loving grace being poured on all who believe. Receive it.. it's yours for the taking. Jesus paid it all !

Chapter 16

Abiding In Christ, The True Vine

*“Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.”
(Matthew 12:33 KJV)*

Trees. There are all kinds of trees in the Bible. The tree of life. The tree of good and evil. And here Jesus speaks about ourselves in an analogy of a tree. *“...or the tree is known by his fruit.”* Isn't that so true? A person can say anything but how can we know they actually mean or what they really think in their hearts? Let's be truthful and acknowledge that everyone is wearing masks to hide their sin right? How can we know their inner motives? Jesus says to *'make the tree good, and his fruit good'* The question is how do we make our inner heart good? And who is it that makes a tree good?

Let's think about that a moment. What is it that makes a tree look the way it does? What determines if a tree will bring forth healthy fruit or withered fruit? Or no fruit at all? Is it the branches or the bark? Is it the leaves? Is it anything externally on the tree at all? No. ***It is the health of the tree root.*** The part that is unseen and buried deep in the earth. Take two apple trees with the exact same external environment; one with apples ready for picking and the other with withered rotten apples, or no apples at all. Other than the fruit, both can look and seem healthy. But there is clearly something wrong with the tree not bearing ripe fruit. That something is usually a problem in the root because the tree right next to it is in the same soil.

God is very clear about the condition we are in; people born into sin. We have a *sinful nature*. We are sinful because there is something wrong with our *inner self*, with our *root*. Our root, separated from God by our choice to commit sin is not well. The Scripture is clear that the wages of sin is death; an eternal death. Our root is so bad that our tree is going to die – in fact it is already spiritually dead until a person accepts Christ's atonement in belief.

We all have this sinful mind in us that the Bible calls *The Flesh*. Also, it is interesting that Jesus speaks of us as if we are trees. The very first book of the Bible, Genesis, reveals how Adam and Eve (humankind) were told not to eat of the *Tree Of The Knowledge Of Good And Evil*. Not to get into that story in depth right now, but bottom line is they disobeyed God and *ate of*, that is, decided to use the knowledge of good and evil.

Later in this story another tree is mentioned called *The Tree Of Life*, a tree giving eternal life. That is why Adam and Eve were cast out of the garden of Eden; to protect them lest they eat of the tree of life and live eternally in sin and separated from the love of God forever. In Matthew 12, prior to Jesus mentioning trees and fruit of people, the Pharisees were attempting to accuse Jesus as ungodly because he was healing people on the Sabbath Day. (The Jews had very strict laws that they thought people should follow regarding the Sabbath Day) They even accused Christ of performing the miracle healing by the power of Satan! To better understand this you must realize that the Pharisees were the most religious men of that time. Men that studied the Torah (what we now call the Old Testament). But Jesus accuses them of not being what they claim. In the book of Matthew, Christ speaks clearly and directly to them and says,

"O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh." (Matthew 12:34 KJV)

Like an apple tree that looks fine outwardly, yet has bad or no fruit, inwardly their hearts were still evil. No matter how many outward good works they did and how much they tried to not sin to please God, they still had a sin debt. Yet, they spoke as if they were more holy than everyone else. They clearly thought that doing good deeds was the way to please God, knowing what is good and what is bad. In essence, they were living by the knowledge of good and evil. Do good deeds to please God and less evil things and if our good outweighs our bad..then God would be pleased.

Do you know anyone that believes this lie? A person that does go to church regularly, on time, best dressed. They tell everyone how close they are to the priest or pastor. They believe they are a good person and on God's side. Yet, they have never dealt with their *root problem*; that is *their sin debt and sinful mind*. The very same people may not forgive others when wronged. In fact, they accuse and are judgmental of others because they think they are somehow, *a better person*. And the thing is they also think they are pleasing God. ***It is so drastically opposed to what God says to us in the Bible!*** If this is describing you, you need to change your mind (Repent) because you have been taught the *Ministry of Condemnation and Death*, that the Apostle Paul fought against, when you should be living the *Ministry of the Law of Liberty in Christ, GRACE (2 Corinthians 3:5-9)*.

The truth is, they are deceived. Look, we have ALL been deceived into thinking about our relationship to God in this manner. *Do good..please God*. Do more good than evil and enter heaven someday, right? This is the lie that Satan told Adam and Eve in the garden from the very beginning and he is still using this lie today and deceiving millions of people! It is based on the *"tree of the knowledge of good and evil"*. It is the sin of PRIDE.

God wants salvation and righteousness before God, not of our own works, but through *faith in Jesus alone*.

*“Knowing that a man is **not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.**” (Galatians 2:16 KJV)*

We all have a problem with our hearts, our inner man, *our root*. It is all about the tree of knowledge of good and evil because we were all born into sin. So Jesus says that we need to “...*make the tree good, and his fruit good*” It is important to notice and understand that Jesus did not say to do good works which would be good fruit. Instead He says TO MAKE the tree (the root) good and by doing so our fruit would be good.

THE KEY QUESTION IN LIFE

How can we have a good root so our life can produce good fruit? Now THAT is the question to find the answer to! If our inner hearts and minds are tuned into God's tree of life, our outward man will bear good fruit in an almost effortless way. So how do we make our inner man *good*?

Jesus answers this question in John 15. Speaking to the disciples, Jesus tells us that He is the vine and we are the branches. Now let us think about that for just a moment. At the moment of our Salvation, Jesus becomes our new root and source of life. He supplies everything to the Branches. Also, if one touches a branch on a vine, have they not also touched the vine? You see when Jesus became our NEW root, our vine, we also became part of the vine.

He makes it very clear that to have our root, our hearts, our inner man changed, we need to accept Christ as our personal saviour. Accept His forgiveness of all our sins and allow the Holy Spirit to dwell in us and renew our

minds by the Word of God and change the *root* of our problem – from a sinful nature to God’s tree of life! Jesus speaks clearly,

“I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. (John 15: 1 KJV)

GOD THE FATHER IS THE VINE DRESSER

It is God who provides everything for everyone and He also provided to us Jesus Christ in His vineyard. Jesus is the Son Of God; God in the flesh. Part of the Triune God. He paid our sin debt and took the punishment for our sins (past/present/future), nailing them to the cross! That is why He said, *“Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.”* This is in reference to John 14 where Jesus previously tells the disciples that he is the only way to God.

The word Jesus had spoken throughout His ministry was the *Gospel of Grace*. The kingdom of God and salvation from slavery in sin. And He prunes (disciplines) those that are His so that they will bear good fruit. Jesus became the bridge between the gap of sinful man and Holy God. It is only through Him we have a recreated spirit relationship with God through means of the cross. And God wants to change us *from the inside out*, through the Holy Spirit *as our root*. Jesus again addresses the root of our problem but this time with the solution when He said,

“I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. (John 15:5-8 KJV)

To bear good fruit, we need a good root. God the Father, controls the vine so that the vine bears good fruit. God the Father provides the seed, the good soil, the rain and the perfect amount of sun for the vine. Jesus Christ who bore our sins and gave us the very righteousness of Christ, is the true vine in God's vineyard.

JOHN 15 VERSE BY VERSE, WATCHING THE CONTEXT CAREFULLY

VERSE 2: EVERY BELIEVER THAT DOES NOT BEAR FRUIT (JOHN 15:2)

"Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away:..."
(John 15:2 KJV)

This verse is not about fruit inspecting a person to see if they are saved or not as many are teaching today! Every branch 'in me', are already eternally saved believers. Those believers that do not bear fruit 'He taketh away'. Some read this and believe it means God will take them away in judgment and condemnation but that is not so at all! The Greek word for this is *airō*. This is usually translated as "*to raise up, to elevate, or to lift up*". Think about a field full of grape vines. Some branches of the vine may be slouching and even half in the dirt. Wind and tough times have this branch weary and weak, half covered and weighed down in the dirt. What does a person attending to the vines do? Cut it off? NO. This is common practice of a vine care taker and those not bearing fruit he will lift up off of the ground so that it takes to the nutrients better in hopes of bearing more fruit. He will prop it up with sticks to get more sun and nutrients from the vine root. This is all about God helping believers to bear more fruit! As believers, we sometimes

receive miraculous help from God, the Vine care taker, in our time of need don't we?

VERSE 2: EVERY BELIEVER THAT BEARS FRUIT (JOHN 15:2)

"...and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit." (John 15:2 KJV)

In the Greek, *'purgeth'* is Strong's G2508 and is defined as *'to cleanse'*. Such a branch (believer) is not laying in the dirt and God continually cleanses it so that it can bear even more fruit. This is where we want to be as believers and God is helping us to achieve that as our source and support and as our strong root.

VERSE 3: EVERY BELIEVER IS SAVED AND CLEANED (JOHN 15:3)

"Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you." (John 15:3 KJV)

What are these words Jesus has spoken to them? By context, the Words in the previous chapters in the book of John that Jesus spoke. Like John 3:14-18, John 6: 39-40, and the very previous chapter of John 14 which are all Jesus telling us that we are saved only by belief on Him and not by our works and Law of Moses following.

VERSE 4 AND 5: A BELIEVER CANNOT DO ANYTHING PLEASING TO GOD BY LIVING IN THE FLESH (JOHN 15:4-5)

“Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: FOR WITHOUT ME YE CAN DO NOTHING.”
(John 15:4-5 KJV)

These two verses by context are very clear right? As a believer, we can choose to do good works with the wrong motive. Some believers believe they have to do good works to remain saved but that is not Biblical truth (read Ephesians 2:8-9 and Galatians 5:4-5). Good works are all good and we should be doing good works for God. But we are not to go off acting like we are our own vines. We are branches! The point is the motive matters in bearing good fruit. Are we relying on our own effort in bearing fruit?

Jesus said He is the vine and we are the branches. As believers, we are not our own vine. We need to let God flow through us you see? A believer can do things by the wrong fleshly motives or they can live outwardly by *‘walking in the Spirit’* (Galatians 5:16). If we act as a vine when we are a branch, we have no source of nutrients to bear any fruit that will matter. Doing so just cuts off God’s power working through us. Is such a person still saved? Yes. Yet, don’t we want God working through us and producing good fruit and helping others come to salvation through belief in Christ? We need the *‘sap’* from God. Bearing good fruit is about allowing God to bear good fruit for the Kingdom, through us. We must be humble and not boast about our good works because they are all God’s work. To bear good fruit for God is to trust and rely on Him and then good works will flow from the root, to the branches and to the leaves; and good fruit will grow.

It is also true that without a person believing on Christ for salvation, God is not indwelling them and not working through them to bear good fruit at all. They are more like *a weed* in the vineyard growing next to a vine. They are not bearing good fruit because they cannot. Their root is the Spirit of Adam and is a sin bent nature. It is their very nature to sin. This is the Spirit of Man that we are all physically born with since the fall in the garden. But when a person comes to accept the free gift salvation through belief on Christ, their root was replaced by God and they can start producing good fruit in their life because they have become IN CHRIST and Christ is IN THEM. It is the very life of God residing within their very core being.

VERSE 6: A BELIEVER NOT LIVING BY THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST (JOHN 15:6)

This verse has caused massive confusion in the Christian community and led many to believe that Jesus is talking about losing Salvation. But the context is clearly not about salvation in John 15. It is about a believer's fruit bearing. It is about Jesus telling us that believers should be Abiding In Christ. That is, LIVING, IN CHRIST. A believer not abiding in Christ is not living by the Spirit of Christ within us. This is a saved person living carnally just like the Corinthians were living. They were saved but walking more by *The Flesh* than *The Spirit of God*. The Flesh is all the wrong sinful thoughts in the mind left over from when our old, now dead Spirit of Adam was our core being. We now have The Spirit of God as our core being but our MIND is not yet fully renewed. This is why Apostle Paul taught we need to renew our MIND in Romans 12. Jesus also mentions it in his prayer for believers before the passion and cross event in John 17:17.

*"If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned."
(John 15:6 KJV)*

Jesus says that those that do not live in the Spirit of Christ, will *'wither'*. In the Greek the word *'wither'* is *xérainó*, meaning *'to dry up'*. They become dry and stale and so they do not bear any fruit at all. What happens to a branch not receiving nutrients from the source? It dries up. It withers. And eventually it is cast off, collected and burnt up *as useless* to bear good fruit.

We need to walk by Christ in us. As Apostle Paul wrote, we need to *"...Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh"* (Galatians 5:16). If we are a saved believer and then we ignore the Spirit and live carnally, our works are useless (DEAD) for the Kingdom! Just as James said, such faith is DEAD, which in Greek is used as an analogy for useless.

What about the burned up part in John 15:6? Some are teaching that God will cut these believers off, they will lose Salvation and be burned for eternity in hell. But is that correct? NO. It cannot be because Jesus in John 14 talks about Salvation by belief on Him alone and John 15 is written to BELIEVERS – not unbelievers. Look closely at the Scripture words Jesus uses in verse 6. It does not read like this,

WRONG:
'and GOD WILL gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.'

That is the lie being taught by so many pulpits these days teaching this is about loss of Salvation. NO. NO. NO... it reads exactly like this,

CORRECT:

"..and MEN GATHER THEM, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned."

Men! Not God!

Jesus is saying that not living in Christ will be looked at by the unsaved as a believer being a hypocrite. Their teaching and witnessing to others is withered as they are by how they are living. It will cause them to be useless for the kingdom. They are saved but their life is being played out by acting as vines and not branches. They are living carnally and without regard for fruit bearing in love towards others. Useless.

Jesus is simply using an analogy here of a well known thing to the Jewish people; and that is running a Vineyard. And this is exactly what they did with old withered and dried up branches. They cut them off so that they do not hurt the entire vine. It is NOTHING more than that. It is not about losing Salvation. Not everywhere in Scripture when the word *'fire'* is used, is it all about condemnation in hell. In fact, what about in the upper room when tongues of fire were seen above the disciples heads? That was referring to the Holy Spirit. What about the burning bush Moses seen? So we must be careful about thinking that the word *'fire'* only means hell in Scripture. We must look at context closer to see the truth.

VERSE 7-10: ABIDE IN CHRIST'S LOVE BY LIVING BY CHRIST'S WORDS AND THE WORD OF GOD (JOHN 15:7-10)

"If ye abide in me, and MY WORDS ABIDE IN YOU, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that YE BEAR MUCH FRUIT; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: CONTINUE YE IN MY LOVE. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love." (John 15:7-10 KJV)

This is such encouragement from Jesus. Live by the *Spirit of Christ* in us – not *The Flesh*. If Christ's WORDS are living in our mind, they are changing our mind (the definition of repent for a believer) and they have replaced wrong fleshly beliefs. We live outwardly as we believe IN THE MIND. The more we read Christ's words from the Bible, the more we will make better decisions and act in love toward others, bearing good fruit from God through us.

Christ is *The Vine* and we are *The Branches*. We need to live as branches and allow God's love to flow through us to others. There should be no boasting in this and we need to be humble. Our old Spirit of Adam is DEAD. **BELIEVE IT!**

Walk in the new Spirit God made us when we were converted by belief on Christ (John 3:18, Ephesians 1:13-14, Romans 6, Colossians 2 and 3, 2 Cor. 5:17-21). If we live in Christ by the New Spirit He made us, we will bear much fruit and God will help us to bear more and more fruit! And the beauty is, each fruit we bear has many seeds. And each of those seeds produce more fruit! Amen! God will help us in bearing good fruit in our lives. He keeps our leaves clean and branches strong in the Lord. What a great God we serve!

VERSE 11: JOHN 15 IS ALL ABOUT GOD WANTING OUR JOY TO BE FULL – NOT ABOUT SALVATION LOSS!

*“These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, AND THAT YOUR JOY MAY BE FULL.”
(John 15:11 KJV)*

WHAT IS BAD FRUIT AND WHAT IS GOOD FRUIT?

The answer comes in Galatians 5 starting at verse 19.

(I) THE BAD FRUIT OF A PERSON...

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.” (Galatians 5:19-21 KJV)

(II) THE GOOD FRUIT OF A PERSON...

“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. And they that are Christ’s have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, LET US ALSO WALK IN THE SPIRIT. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.” (Galatians 5:22-26 KJV)

The goal is to not make yourself look clean on the outside while we are full of sin inwardly, in our inner man and mind. We need to be clean inside and it will work its way to your outward man. But we can't do this ourselves. We need Christ's forgiveness of sins and we need to read the Word of God to renew our mind to God's viewpoint, and the Holy Spirit also changes us from within.

"Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price." (1 Peter 3:3-4 KJV)

God looks at us inside; not outwardly. It is not what you DO but the motives you have inside that He looks at. Your Spirit is the real you regardless what is happening outwardly. And we can align our own thinking to what the Holy Spirit is doing in us so that we will bear good fruit as we see in Philippians 4:8:

*"Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, THINK ON THESE THINGS."
(Philippians 4:8 KJV)*

REST IN GOD

Allow Christ to change us from the inside out, through the true vine; Jesus Christ. And in time, we will bear the good fruit of God. And it will be our joy, the joy Christ wants for us! Love one another just as God loves and loved you in the blood sacrifice for sins through Christ Jesus. Abide in the words of God. Abide in the

words of Jesus and we will learn to say as Paul and the writer of Hebrews also wrote,

“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.”

(Romans 1:16 KJV)

“Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into His rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.”

(Hebrews 4:1 KJV)

Along our journey in life God prunes those who believe and through good and bad times and experiences, He uses them all so that we produce good fruit. Ephesians says,

“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.”

(Ephesians 2:10 KJV)

As Christians, what should we do? Abide in the word! Read your Bible. Believe it because God promises it is true! And God will place desires on your heart and will do His good works through you, as a branch. THEN you will start bearing good fruit.

We are not vines who set our own paths and make up our own good works to please God – that is how the whole world outside of Christ believes because whether they realize it or not, that is following Satan’s deception in the garden of Eden. Instead, Christians are *branches of Christ* and *part of the vine*, with the Holy Spirit dwelling within us.

Chapter 17

You Will Have Troubles in Life

“These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.” (John 16:33 KJV)

We all have ups and downs in life and no one lives a completely trouble free life. We all have good times and bad times. Of course, we all like the song that sings, *Let the good times roll!* We can be sure, and I mean very sure, that trouble will eventually strike our life. Now each of us will have different degrees of trouble but we all will experience it. Such times will test our faith. That is, we will see how much faith we truly have and just how much we need to rely on God.

We may look at some people and think that they have it made; they do not have the problems we are facing, *right?* The truth is everyone has obstacles and troubles that only God knows they are dealing with. It is true that some may be experiencing more severe troubles than another, but many times we do not even know the hard time they may actually be going through. It could be a physical ailment. It could be severe depression. Whatever it is, God will allow troubles into a person's life and it is for a purpose. But the end result will be for our own good, even if it does not *feel* like it. We need to realize that emotions can be deceptive. We should not go just by our emotions; what we need is the facts and the truth regarding bad times and bad situations we find ourselves in.

*"And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.
(Romans 8:28 KJV)*

WHY THE TROUBLE THEN?

We need to understand that whatever God purposes is always good. But good for who we may ask? I mean we don't like the trials and bad times right? Let's face it, they are no fun at all. However, if God allows it in our life, *there is a purpose He has for it* and it is to:

1. Build Our Confidence And Faith In God.

As we look at our past we will see how God was with us through our trials and bad times in life. Sometimes, as we do, we realize and see His purpose for it. Our trust in God will increase with each trial – whether we passed or failed, we have learned.

2. God Is Good. God Loves Us.

What ever happens know and trust this as a fact. God gave His own Son to take on the punishment for our sins. And Christ's sacrifice for us was done in a very horrific way. Jesus actually became our sin (2 Corinthians 5:21). The Father turned away from Jesus and Christ felt God's presence leave. In utter anguish Jesus, *"...cried out with a loud voice, saying, 'Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?' that is, "...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?"* (Matthew 27:46 KJV)

Notice here that Jesus now says 'My God' twice to emphasize and not 'My Father'. During His ministry He always called God, **His Father**, *an endearing title of*

closeness, showing an intimate bond, but here Jesus calls out to **My God**. The intimate Father/Son bond was temporarily severed. All the physical pain and suffering was bad enough but then Jesus, who always had the presence of God for all eternity past, was found to be alone as his human side took on the punishment for our sins. God had to remove Himself from Jesus, that is the spirit of God.

There is no doubt of God's love because *"He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" (Romans 8:32 KJV)*

Bad things can sometimes be because God has a plan and it is for our good, our loved ones good, or even a stranger's good. And we may not get the answer to the question *why* all the time. Many times we find out later *why* as we look back at our life. Other times, we will not know the full reasons until we reach Heaven. And also do not think that God makes bad things happen to you as a believer. God is good all the time. But He will use bad things for your good. He may not cause a trouble in your life. It may be because of sin. It may be because of a working scheme of the devil and his fallen angels to deceive you in hopes of you losing your fellowship with God even. God will sometimes stop something bad from happening to you before it does and we never really even know about those times. **God is in our corner!** However, many times God may see something good to come out of a trouble in life and He works with you IN and THROUGH the trouble. One look at the Apostles Paul's life attests to that as he was beaten and abused so many times, yet look what it accomplished!

3. If Jesus had trouble, why should we be any different?

The ultimate example is Jesus the Christ Himself. As God, He allowed Himself to become human and a little lower than the angels in rank (Psalm 8:5). Jesus became human and humbled Himself in a spectacular way.

*"...He was wounded **for our transgressions**, He was bruised **for our iniquities**; **The chastisement for our peace was upon Him.**" (Isaiah 53:5 KJV).*

Jesus was misunderstood and was mocked, as *"Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote him with the palms of their hands, Saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, Who is he that smote thee?" (Matthew 26:67-68 KJV)*. Jesus was whipped to the point of being bodily *no longer familiar*. He was nailed to a cross and stabbed in the side. Horrible stuff! Knowing what was about to happen to Him on the evening before all this took place, Jesus was deeply distressed.

*Jesus "...began to be sorrowful and very heavy. Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me. And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: **nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.**" (Matthew 26:36-39 KJV)*

Just three words, *'as thou wilt.'* is key to how we should look at the bad times in our life. It is okay to pray to God *if there is another way..some other way, a different way where I am not going through this time of trouble please let this trouble pass by me.* We must also keep in mind what God's plan may be and that you add *'Your will be done.'* Some teach in the *Word Of Faith Movement* that

doing so is a lack of faith in a time of trouble. Really? Jesus did it right? Yet somehow for us it is a lack of faith? *The Word Of Faith Movement* is very unbiblical really. That kind of teaching is very wrong.

Instead, understand that God has a purpose in *allowing* this trouble into your life. There is a real purpose to our troubles and tribulations in our life. And really when we look at it in the light of all Eternity we have with God it is a mere blink of time! The Apostle Paul helps us to have the correct perspective in how we live when he wrote ,

“For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.” (Romans 8:14-18 KJV)

Simply look at the life and death of Jesus and remember that on the third day after His death, Jesus rose from the dead and has now *redeemed humankind through all that pain and trouble*. Jesus cried out on the cross in a loud voice, ***“It Is Finished!”***. What was finished? God’s perfect purpose. Jesus defeated the efforts of Satan and Christ is seated at the right hand of the Father in power. He will return, take over the world wide government and rule on the Earth forever. And if Jesus had trouble as the Son of God, can we expect any different in our lives? Jesus told us , *“...The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. ” (John 13:16 KJV)*

Besides, how can we truly help a person in need if we do not understand what it is really like to be in their shoes? God can use the negative experiences in our life for the good of others as well right? It is one thing to tell someone about something but until they *experience it for themselves* a person cannot really understand it. It is hard to take advice from a person that has never experienced what you are going through isn't it?

Before I had children I heard stories about what it is like to be a parent. But until I had children of my own, I really didn't get the whole truth and understanding about what being a parent *really was like*. Then I heard and generally understood but now I know that I know, that I fully know! I am *living the experience* of being a parent first hand. It is easy to help another new parent with their first baby or encourage them now because I really *get it* when their kid is screaming in a restaurant – while all people without kids are being judgmental about the event. I tend to encourage them that *we have been there, don't worry about it-it's normal*. A small word and encouraging smile goes a long way! People without kids don't truly understand it because they do not yet have children of their own. I think you can see my point here; sometimes God allows a trouble into your life so that you can help others as well down the road.

IS IT OKAY TO ASK GOD THE QUESTION... 'WHY'?

It is the troubled times in our lives, even some very serious or even life threatening, that we tend to ask God, the question *why? Why did you allow this bad situation in my life? Why..Why..why??* Does God get mad at us when we do this? Let's look at Jesus' life again. Days before the death of Lazarus a messenger was sent to Jesus to inform Him that his close friend Lazarus was dying. You would expect Christ to go to him immediately and heal him as he did for so many others. However, for His close friend, Jesus instead, *delayed on purpose*,

*“Now a certain man was sick, named Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha. (It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) **Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.***

*When Jesus heard that, he said, **This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God**, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.*

*When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode **TWO DAYS STILL in the same place where he was**. Then **after that** saith he to his disciples, **Let us go into Judaea again.**” (John 11:1-7 KJV)*

This seems out of character for Jesus, *the healer of thousands*. Jesus stayed where He was *for two more days* and then made the trip back to Judea where Lazarus and his sisters lived. We can see that Jesus had a special friendship and bond with this family so why the delay? Jesus did state the reasons why when He said *“This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified through it.”* You can see here that God **had a purpose that is about to be revealed** through this painful experience the family and friends of Lazarus are going through. When Jesus arrived He was met by Martha, the sister of Lazarus.

*“Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four days already. Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat still in the house. Then said **Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.** But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee. (John 11:17-22 KJV)*

So Jesus shows up at the families home but Lazarus had already died by the time Jesus arrives and was in the tomb **four days**. The Jewish custom of that day is that after four days, the person's spirit went on and left the body. Four days was a *no turning back point*. In other words, Lazarus was 100% dead. Martha knew Jesus was the Son of God, yet her heart was so grieved she just blurted it out to Jesus '*if you only had been here*'. She is asking the question "why were you not here to save Lazarus, your close friend?" And then she used her faith in Jesus saying "*But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.*"

*"Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again **in the resurrection at the last day.***

*Jesus said unto her, **I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die.** Believest thou this? She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world."* (John 11:23-27 KJV)

We can see that Martha has faith in Christ as she states she knows Lazarus will rise again at the resurrection in the future . Yet she questioned Jesus directed about why He did not come and heal Lazarus before he died. Hers was a question of why did Jesus not prevent his death and all the troubles we feel now.

Now God reveals His purpose for Lazarus' death. Jesus is using this to show everyone that He is the Messiah. Jesus did raise others from death. But never someone dead for four whole days! Something else to note here is where Jesus talked about the resurrection.

Jesus said, "***I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in***

me shall never die.” At first glance it seems Jesus is repeating Himself but reality is He is not. He is describing two separate groups of believers resurrected; (i) the dead in Christ and (ii) those alive and remaining at the rapture event.

“Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.” (John 11:38-44 KJV)

It was a horrible event to Lazarus, his sisters Martha and Mary and to Jesus as Lazarus was a close friend. Yet *God used this for a great purpose and* revealed to everyone that Jesus is sent from God, to show the love and resurrection power of God, and their sadness did a 180 degrees... ***To complete joy.*** And this is the event that led to the cross because after this event, the religious leaders sought to kill Jesus because they knew the people would start following Christ instead of them. They would start to lose their power.

GOD'S WAY IN HIS GOOD TIME

We must learn that God will not do everything the way you expect, or when you expect it. But you can have complete trust that the ultimate outcome will build

your character, help you help others, bless you or those around you, and still meet God's perfect Holy character while fulfilling His plan for humankind. And sometimes, we can't see any good coming from such a horrible life event. Some end in death even. But God will use it for good. He said so.. And so it will be so.

Let God be good and every man a liar. **God is good!** And it is alright to pour out our hearts to God and ask, or cry out, 'WHY?'. Your Father understands! Martha did just that and Jesus did not rebuke her but encouraged her faith in Him. King David did (Psalm 62:8) and he tells us to "*Trust in him at all times; ye people, pour out your heart before him: God is a refuge for us. ...*" God called David a man after his own heart. Above all, being truthful to God and running to God will result in Him holding you, strengthening you and helping you throughout the situation. In fact, for me, it is in the midst of these life trials that I feel God's presence with me the strongest. God tells us that when we are weak, God is strong with us.

"He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength. " (Isaiah 40:29 KJV)

If you are in the midst of a small or humongous trial believe that *God has not abandoned you.* He is with you. He has a plan. Trust in Him. We will lack in faith in this at times but always come back after the emotions of it and believe what God tells us:

"The LORD also will be a refuge for the oppressed, a refuge in times of trouble. (Psalm 9:9 KJV)

"Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee." (Hebrews 13:5 KJV)

Chapter 18

The Holy Spirit Intercedes For Us

*“Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, **because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.** And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are called according to his purpose.” (Romans 8:26-28 KJV)*

As we seen in the previous Chapter, we will all experience troubles in our life. Sometimes the troubles are very severe. Situations that are very hard to grasp why it is happening. You have faith in God but you just do not understand *right now* why God has allowed it in your life. You know those times when something happens in our life so stressful and so confusing that we just do not have the words and we just do not know how we should pray? Either an extremely stressful situation at work or a relationship issue that you do not know how to resolve? Some event that leaves you utterly confused as to what God is doing and why He allows things that are not very comfortable in our lives. Such incidents can have you feeling that you do not know how you should pray to God about the situation. You have faith in God but faith enough to know how to pray about this?? Sometimes all you can do is groan, scream or just cry – *fully overwhelmed*. You do not want to pray in a way opposite to what God wants to accomplish but you just don't know how you should pray and your feelings make things very confusing.

Regardless of the situation you need to pray and it is good to know that the Holy Spirit knows the full situation and He makes intercession for you to the

Father. And no matter what the situation is, minor or major, you can rest assured that nothing surprises God!

*“And we know that **all things work** together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose.” (Romans 8:28 KJV)*

The word *ALL* means ALL; that is *every situation in life* you find yourself in. **The good, the bad, the ugly.... all of it.** God knew the situation you would be in *before* you reached that point in your life. God goes before you, before you reach that point and He already has plans to use it for your good! (Deuteronomy 1:30) Rest assured that God is in complete control of every situation you are in at every point of your life. God is not the one that brings evil against you but He can and will use the situation for your good. When Jesus was before Pilate a dialogue exchange happened as we see in the book of John,

*“Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? Jesus answered, **Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above...**” (John 19:10-11 KJV)*

What we sometimes see as bad in our lives may be something that God will use for good. So you do not understand what is happening to you and you do not know how to pray? Thank God that He gave us the Holy Spirit who will intercede for you and God will respond in the best way and always for your good and the good of those around you. And that is regardless of the outcome. Even if we do not see the outcome as positive, God will use it for our own good.

Chapter 19

Faith, Do You Have It?

“Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.” (Romans 4:4-5 KJV)

What is true faith as described in the Bible? Reading Romans 4, it seems like the world is flipped upside down. Most people today believe that we have to work to gain God's love. Notice that the first part of this Scripture mentions a person that does works (good works, rituals, religious activities) to gain God's favour yet it does not say he has faith. Why? Because he does not have faith in the right *object* which is Jesus Christ. *“...is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.”* A debt is something that is due. God's grace is a person and that person is Jesus Christ, the fullness of God's grace. To the person who BELIEVES in Jesus, his faith is reckoned by God as Righteousness. A saved person has faith in God because they have Christ as the object of their faith. It is not faith in self righteousness and what *we do* to gain God's favour. It is faith in the grace of God and how Jesus Christ paid the penalty for the sins of the world.

“Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.” (John 6:28 KJV)

That is Jesus being as straight and clear as possible in one quick answer. If we believe that Salvation comes by grace alone, by faith alone, in the atonement for sin provided by Christ alone (see Ephesians 2:8-9), then we are doing the work

of God. We are responding correctly to His greatest will for our life. Jesus is the Son of God born of the virgin Mary without sin and He came for the sole purpose of testifying to the truth and to die on the cross to take upon Himself the punishment for *OUR SINS*. Believe in Christ by faith; This is what God wants us to do. This is what will please Him.

WHAT IS FAITH?

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.” (Hebrews 11:1 KJV)

“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.” (Hebrews 11:3 KJV)

“So Abram departed, as the Lord had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran. And Abram took Sarai his wife, and Lot his brother's son, and all their substance that they had gathered, and the souls that they had gotten in Haran; and they went forth to go into the land of Canaan; and into the land of Canaan they came.” (Genesis 12:4-5 KJV)

It is by faith that Abraham left his home at the age of 75 and travelled to Canaan because God commanded. It is by faith that Abraham believed that God would provide him and Sarah with a son, even though he was very old and Sarah was barren and passed the age to have another child. (Hebrew 11:11) Earlier in his life God promised Abraham that his descendants would be as many as the stars in the sky. Here we see how God usually does not fulfill or answer prayers in a way or at a time we would expect.

It is by faith that Abraham did not hold back his only son when God commanded he be offered as a sacrifice. God stopped him of course. It was a test of faith and knowing God. On the way up the mountain his son asked what animal was to be sacrificed as they did not bring any with them and Abraham answered "*God will provide one*". So Abraham used his faith knowing that God could not do such a thing. He remained faithful to the very last moment!

By faith, Moses' mother hid him for 3 months even though the king of Egypt would certainly have them put to death. (Hebrews 11:23) By faith Moses' mother placed the baby Moses in a floating reed and sent him down the river believing God would care for him (Exodus 2:5-10). God not only did so, he allowed Moses mother to nurse him while young and later hand him over to become Pharaoh's son! How graceful was that?! Amazing God we serve.

It is by faith that David defeated Goliath while the tough men of the Army of Israel were frightened. (1 Samuel 17) The list of examples of faith in the Bible go on and on. **Faith in what? THAT is the question to answer!**

THE OBJECT OF OUR FAITH; JESUS CHRIST

The Bible shows us that we should *have faith in God (Mark 11:22)* and Jesus says to *trust in God and also trust Him. (John 14:1)* This is then what we must do, TRUST IN GOD; have faith in what He is saying to us in the Bible.

Some people say, *I do not have enough faith* but that is actually not true at all if you think about it a moment. When you go to sit in a chair do you trust it will hold you? Yes, you have a *sure believing faith* that it will hold you and so you sit. Every time you step into an elevator, you have a full assurance *in faith* that you will be taken to the floor you want. When you drive your car you must have faith that the brakes will work when you come to a light right? These demonstrate faith in something that a human being created and maintains. Why is it so hard to have

faith in what God tells us in the Bible? He is God and there is no surer being to trust is there? ***You see, Faith is not something you do, it is something you trust.*** If you believe that God is within you, and that He has made you the very Righteousness of God, in Christ, then you can trust Him with your very life. You can have full faith in Him. To have faith in God's Word is to trust God's promises.

DOES FAITH SAVE YOU?

Having faith alone is NOT what saves a person. You need to have faith in the right object which is Jesus Christ. It is God's Grace that saves a person. It is a person changing his mind about his sin (to Repent) and believe in the only atonement for our sin provided and paid for by Jesus Christ alone. It is not by our own efforts we are saved. Believe Christ Is The Son of God and you shall be saved. Once you are saved you have faith because you TRUSTED in Christ to save you. This is what is meant by being *in the faith*. That is believing and trusting in the true object of our faith, Jesus Christ, and trusting that what He says is the most reliable thing you will ever believe!

*"For by grace are ye saved **through faith**; and that not of yourselves: it is **the gift of God**:" (Ephesians 2:8 KJV)*

Salvation is a GIFT from God. God offers this gift to everyone. But to have a gift is to RECEIVE the gift. We receive God's gift of Salvation by believing and trusting on Christ *alone* to save us. It is not a special prayer with specific words. That is, it is not just words that save a person. We do not put our faith in a prayer. It is not some special arrangement of words, nor penance that will save a person. Salvation has nothing to do with our deeds.

It is not by using words in such a way to release some kind of *faith power* that the false *Word Of Faith Movement* teaches today on so many television ministries. Faith is not by buying a *special prayer cloth* from a ministry to receive God's blessings. It is not by listening to a preacher on TV telling you God has given him a *special word for someone listening* with a physical ailment. You do realize most of these shows are prerecorded, yet they have a special word from God for just YOU. Is that really true? Is that really Biblical? No. It is totally NOT Biblical! Show me where the Bible shows Jesus doing such things. You cannot! It does not exist folks. Please do not be deceived and send these false teachers money! Instead, read the Bible for the ONLY truth! Does God heal people today? Yes. He does. Is it dependant on how we speak the word to gain such results? No. These are self righteous acts and of no worth to God. **God looks at your heart.**

He knows everything that will happen to you as a believer from the very foundation of the Earth – *LONG before you even existed on Earth*. You think anything surprises Him? Will God allow some bad things in your life for *His purposes which are always ultimately good*? Yes, He will and does it everyday because He loves us far beyond our own understanding! Knowing and believing this through our every circumstance in life and *trusting God is in it with you and is holding you all the way..* that is REAL FAITH! Faith is not some ritual or religious activity that will save a person. It is not a blind faith without understanding how Jesus saves you! A person needs to understand the Gospel message before they can believe it through faith.

You need to understand *what the gift is* and then *receive it in belief*. Have faith in Jesus Christ, the Son of God, who is equal with God, and is God. So many times when Jesus healed people He would say *“YOUR FAITH has made you well”*. Was it their faith in their own acts that healed them? Is that what he was saying? No. It was God's Grace that healed them but they trusted that Jesus would heal them by faith in Christ. Simply put, they believed Christ was able to heal them

because He was their *object of faith*. Jesus tells us that it is not the size of your faith that gives the power. It is instead the object you have faith in.

“And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you.” (Luke 17:5-6 KJV)

Have you ever seen a mustard seed? A mustard seed is a very small seed! Maybe even the smallest of seeds. It is God's Grace that saves us. It is by believing in Jesus Christ that we have faith. The simplicity of the Gospel and the power of the Gospel is wrapped in faith.

“Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.” (Matthew 21:31-32 KJV)

This is so true. The pious and those *full of themselves in pride*, those that claim they are *a good person* while believing it is *others who are sinners*.... Their deeds are like filthy rags because they do not admit their sinful nature to God so they could be forgiven.

But those that know they do wrong can be convicted of their sin – they know they have done wrong and they ask God for forgiveness and mercy and God forgives them. And not only that, he gives them the power to be the very sons and daughters of God, filled with the very righteousness of God IN CHRIST (2 Corinthians 5:21). That is serious power.

You believe there is a God? Do you believe so as a guess or do you see the world, the defined order of the cosmos, how inter dependant every living being is to each other, the amazing Earth? You believe God exists because of the proofs you see in nature? Well the Bible has more than ample proof that it is the one true word of the one true God of the Universe. So you can have full faith and assurance that what the Bible says is true, 100% true.

HAVE FAITH IN CHRIST!

The world needs this now more than any other time in history. The prophetic end time events are already starting to happen. Israel is again a blossoming nation in our generation just as foretold in Scriptures. We are closer to the Rapture and the return of Jesus Christ to set up His governing rule on Earth than ever before!

Ask yourself,

*"...Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh,
shall he find faith on the earth?"*

(Luke 18:8 KJV)

Chapter 20

God Says Haughty Is Naughty

I write this chapter for fellow believers, true Bible based Christians. We see today those who point their noses down on others who do wrong and who sin. As if, as a believer, we are any better than they when it comes to sinning?

Our commission, given by Jesus Christ, is to preach the good news of the Gospel. To inform others the good news that the penalty for our sins was paid for in full by the Lord Jesus Christ. So great in love and mercy is our Lord towards us! Our commission is not to be judges against the sins of others and look down upon such a person. The writings of the Apostle Paul and other Scriptures put it this way,

“Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things. But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God? Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?ce? (Romans 2:1-4 KJV)

“Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:” (Luke 6:37 KJV)

Please brothers and sisters in Christ, know this; God hates a haughty spirit. God hates the sin of pride.

*"Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall."
(Proverbs 16:18 KJV)*

*"Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind
let each esteem other better than themselves." (Philippians 2:3 KJV)*

*"I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in
me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of
God, who loved me, and gave himself for me." (Galatians 2:20 KJV) "*

*But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud,
but giveth grace unto the humble." (James 4:6 KJV)*

*"Seest thou a man wise in his own conceit? there is more hope of a fool
than of him." (Proverbs 26:12 KJV)*

GOD HATES A JUDGMENTAL HAUGHTY SPIRIT!

We all are sinners deserving of eternal punishment. No one can match up to the Holiness of God Almighty. We are saved only by the grace of God, through the hardship Jesus went through when He paid for our sins, so that we may be saved for all eternity. Did we make ourselves the Righteousness of God in Christ? **No, we did not.** Do believers still sin after Salvation? Yes, we do sin or we are just lying! Should we try to avoid sinning? Absolutely yes! Paul said,

"...Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh." (Galatians 5:16 KJV)

We need to look at things in the light of the truth of God's word alone. As saved believers we are only set apart from unbelievers and sanctified because of one thing; *we are saved by the grace of God alone, through faith alone, in Christ*

alone. It is nothing we have done any better than the unbelievers through our own efforts. God gave us perfect GRACE through Jesus Christ (God in he flesh). Should we not give grace to others as well? Yes. Yes we should.

Warn others about sin? Sure. In a condemning way, as if you are better than they regarding sin? NEVER. Instead, let us use it as an opportunity to share the Gospel in a loving Biblical way.

**Think about THAT when you see others sinning.
Then in love act accordingly.**

Chapter 21

The Unforgiving Servant

“Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.” (Matthew 18: 21-35 KJV)

Jesus is talking to His disciples here. He is telling this parable to his intimate group of disciples. Earlier, Peter is asking Jesus about forgiveness to his brother (fellow believers, starting at verse 22). Just how often am I to forgive a brother who sins against me?

The debt here represents our SINS. It is a debt that *we cannot repay*. The servant owed 10,000 talents. That is a massive debt, truly massive. That would equate to several million dollars today. This shows us just how sinful we are in the God's sight. We have an absolutely un-repayable debt of sins, that through our own effort, we cannot repay.

The King/Master is Jesus Christ. This scene looks almost like a court room. The servant is brought in to give an account for his sin debt to God.

The servant owed an enormous debt (had a lifetime of sins) and the King demanded that payment be made but it was such a large debt that the servant could not pay it. The King's judgment is to sell the servant *and his entire family* to regain the money owed to him. Not that just the servant will be sold but *his entire family*. It is a severe judgment. As is judgment for a persons sins. We are all hopelessly guilty before God with no way to repay. God keeps an account of sins and every sin is added to an account and logged.

At the appointed time that God has set, He will open this account *to settle it*. Each sin debt will be paid. The terms by which this will happen are in perfect alignment to the perfect character of God *who never changes*. God will ensure that His character remains intact. We have to be accountable to God, but *God is accountable to Himself*, as there is no other higher being that exists.

In verse 26, the servant pleads to God saying, "Lord, have patience with me, **and I will pay thee all.**" This verse is a tell tale. What I mean is, the servant is saying he will pay back this enormous debt if given more time, *as if he could through his own efforts*, yet knowing it has already been a long time without repayment because he has been brought before the King. This makes some wonder if this servant is a believer at all that Jesus is speaking about. This particular servant is just like all of us in that we have a huge sin debt against God. But this servant, in his plea for mercy, does not seem to admit that he could never pay back this debt. He outright lies about doing so. It is utterly impossible. Then again, when we first come to the Lord Jesus we may not always see just how bad things really are in God's sight. Isn't that true? Yes we acknowledge we have a huge sin debt but I am willing to bet you the debt is MUCH LARGER than we think it really is!

So what does this King do? Remember, the King is really God in this parable. The King forgives his entire debt, *all of it!* Millions of today's dollars! And then RELEASES and FREES the servant! *The King gives him a free pass!* This my friends is the very nature of God and shows how much he loves us in His perfect compassion and love, *even when we are yet sinners*. Now something to also realize is that it was only after the servant cried out and begged for mercy, in fear of the King's righteous punishment, that the King was moved to compassion and forgave all this servant's debts. In the same way, we must realize that God must repay and punish a person's sins because He is such a Holy and perfectly just being. Only those who repent and understand this and cry out to God to forgive them will receive forgiveness through Christ.

You would think that after being forgiven the debt and being made completely free that this servant would have had some serious gratitude and a very thankful heart. After having been so forgiven while he was seriously guilty of not paying his debts you would think that he would have such compassion on

others as well. Unfortunately, this particular servant shown a complete lack of caring, as we see when he runs into another person who owes him just 100 denari, or in the Greek 100 denarius . A denarius was around the equivalent to a day's wage being around \$20USD. So that equates to just about \$2000 USD in today's modern economy. Now if you compare the millions of dollars this servant owed and was forgiven of when he asked the King for mercy, what is a debt of \$2000? This forgiven servant **in anger** grabs the guy and demands that he pay him back NOW. The person that owes him money fell down at his feet and begged him asking to have have patience so that he could repay it all back. And did this forgiven servant remember what it was like to owe a debt that you cannot repay yet? I mean, he could never have paid back the millions. Here it is only about 100 days of work. Surely a payment plan could have been arranged over a couple years or more. But what does he do instead? He *threw him into prison till he should pay the debt*. He threw this guy in prison! Not nice at all is it?

When the King finds out what he has done (and God knows everything that we have done!) the reaction is swift and harsh indeed.

*"O **thou wicked servant**, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him."*

Does it seem like the King was fair or unfair? Would you say, more than fair? Now we are getting to the bottom of this parable to the disciples. The forgiven servant is now called '**wicked**'. Jesus then says something that we really need to take to heart that is of great importance.

*“So likewise shall my heavenly Father **do also unto you**, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.”*

I do not think that this parable is saying that once a person is saved and forgiven their sins through the atonement of Jesus Christ that their Salvation can be revoked. That would go against so many Scriptures that show we are secure in Christ from the moment of our Salvation. That would even contradict the words of Jesus Himself many times in Scripture.

The way the servant asks the King for mercy and the request to give him *more time* (be patient) to pay back the debt shows that this individual does not grasp the reality of the situation. He thinks he can pay back the debt of sin *in self effort* but *we cannot repay for our sins ourselves*. Only Christ accomplished this for us on the cross. And being forgiven by the King, he then thinks arrogantly and that he is better than others who are sinning and have a sin debt, as if he does not have sin still. And treats them harshly based on their debt as a sinner. Too full of PRIDE just like Satan is. The King calls this servant *‘wicked’* and that is not a term ever used for the believers of Christ.

God forgave us with the blood of His Son, Jesus Christ. It was not just an easy pass. Salvation is a free gift for us to receive without self effort. But for God and Jesus it was hardly free; it was an extremely painful act in love towards us. As a redeemed person we need to have a forgiving heart towards others, even when they sin against you in a vial manner; ***forgive others to the extreme!*** Pray that God open their eyes and save them. *Only God can do it!*

DOES FORGIVE MEAN TO FORGET?

And do not think that to forgive means to forget. Forgive and do not repay them for their wrongdoing, that is forgiveness towards others. It does not mean that you have to go back and continually take abuse of any kind. But just WALK AWAY and know that God is right there with you. Recognize that you too sin against others at times and forgive them. But do not take revenge yourself against such a person, *"...but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. " (Romans 12:19 KJV)*

Give that task to God but ask Him to forgive them as Stephen did, even while they were stoning him! As Christ did even as they were mocking Him and hanging Him on the cross! Pray for them, pray for even your enemies, and for God to bring them repentance unto Salvation in Christ. In other words, ***"Let go. And let God."*** By doing this you are doing right as a forgiven child of God.

THE TRAGEDY OF THE WICKED

"But as for me, my feet were almost gone; my steps had well nigh slipped. For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked. For there are no bands in their death: but their strength is firm. They are not in trouble as other men; neither are they plagued like other men."
(Psalm 73:2-5 KJV)

Have you ever noticed how *The Wicked*, and as yet unredeemed people of the world, tend to have some pretty amazing luck? How many times have you heard a believer ask *"I am redeemed through Christ and I try to do good works for the Lord, but why is it I keep having major problems while I see so many wicked*

evil people doing so well?" It sure does seem that way at times, doesn't it? This world is being ruled to a certain extent by Satan until Christ's returns and locks him away for 1000 years. Anything that goes against the world system, or the world's way, is going against the wind and it causes turbulence.

God loves people *unconditionally* right? Does He not love a person that is yet, unredeemed and who has not accepted Christ? The Bible is clear that God loves everyone, sinners included, *unconditionally*. And you know what? If a person is not recognizing their sinfulness and is asking God for mercy, saying to God "I WILL pay you back", that person is trying to buy their way to freedom from their sin debt. That will not save that person. However, does God have the right to help the lost from their financial situation in compassion? Look at this Scripture,

*"Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, **Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;** That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: **for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.** For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect." (Matthew 5: 43-48 KJV)*

These are the very words of Jesus instructing us how to behave and live for God. This is how our attitude should be. He tells us here that God loves the unredeemed too and He sends good things to both the wicked and the good. Jesus is telling us plainly that this is how we should be treating others, both believers and non believers, after our Salvation. Where would we be without the forgiveness that God obtained for us through Jesus Christ? We would be hell

bound for eternity my friend. Thank God for His forgiveness, now go and forgive others and God will highly respect that as He works through you to a lost world.

You have trouble while the wicked seem not to have troubles? Understand that God has given you ALL THINGS through Christ. You are Heaven bound forever. But what of the wicked and unredeemed? They may be having it good now but it is fleeting. Be encouraged because Christ said ,

“These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.” (John 16:33 KJV).

The word *tribulation* used here in the original Greek is the word *'thlipsis'* which has a meaning of *'pressure (what constricts or rubs together), used of a narrow place that hems someone in; tribulation, especially internal pressure that causes someone to feel confined, a feeling of no way to escape'* .

With the Holy Spirit residing within us we are bound to go against the grain of the world system as it is today because it is an ungodly world system right now. And it will continue to be until Jesus returns to Earth to rule and reign. As believers in Christ, the Holy Spirit guides us and renews our minds through the Word of God, over time and we start to see things through God's eyes and not the worlds eyes. We need to have a heart for the lost. Do you not remember that you were once lost too?

One side of the coin is that the wicked prosper because God is good to the unbeliever and the believer. The other side of the coin at work *is Satan and his fallen angels*. The Bible calls Satan *'the ruler of this world'* (John 12:31) And Satan is perfectly fine with a person that either rejects God altogether, or a person that bases his status with God on their own *self effort* and *good works*. Satan loves it when people do all kinds of *religious things* and *rituals* and *penance for sins*. He

loves it when people compare themselves *with others as a standard of righteousness* instead of comparing against *the true standard, our Holy God*. He loves it because these people are having the same sin that Satan has; the sin of pride. **It is all about self effort and self righteousness.** If you think about it a moment; will Satan and his fallen angels work to continue them in prosperity and keep their mind off God, or give them troubles in life?

You see, it is a funny thing about life troubles. Many times it is only in these life troubles that people tend to cry out to God for help. We realize the trouble is way out of our control. When we are at the very bottom , there is only ONE way to look and that is UP! Up to God for help. Satan does not want people turning to God or thinking that maybe there is a God who will help me, who loves me. So, as ruler of this world Satan and his fallen angels may be assisting these people in being successful in the worldly and ungodly system, in which we live. And this being the case, if you are having troubles in life that just seem to gnaw at you and you are fighting one battle and then into another. You need to know where it is coming from. It is like Jesus says,

“Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.” (Matthew 5:11-12 KJV)

Rejoice when you are being persecuted and people say all kinds of evil things about you? When they gossip about you and falsely accuse you? Why rejoice in that? Because God has given you ALL THINGS.

“He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? “ (Romans 8:32 KJV)

At the Rapture you will be as Jesus is! Immortal. Without a sin nature! Blessed for ever! The Wicked and unbelieving do not have this long term blessed hope. All they have is FEAR in what is coming for them. But believers in Christ do! Jesus says to be exceedingly GLAD! GREAT is your reward in heaven!

This world and world system is fleeting. Most people have a life span of maybe 90 years? Most only around 70-80 years. What is that amount of time compared to forever and ever and ever in the presence of God, with no more sinful mind in people? Where everything is a pure blessing. Where there will be no more tears even?

At the moment of a person's Salvation the inner nature became a new creation. (2 Corinthians 5:17) A heaven bound creation. We are just waiting for our bodies to be changed and then ZAP!.. we are in the presence of Jesus forever in immortality.

Forgive everyone that sins against you! Even when it is very hard!

Especially when it is very hard! Give it to God.

You do the RIGHT thing and leave all the rest to God.

Chapter 22

The Filling Of The Holy Spirit

*"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: According as he hath chosen us in him **before the foundation of the world**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved." (Ephesians 1:3-6 KJV)*

Take a close look at what is being said in this Scripture and it will surely bless you greatly and make you love God even more than you may already do. It is not saying anything about what *we humans have done* to make ourselves Holy and accepted by God as a son or daughter in Heavenly places. Instead it is saying that it is all, *100% the work of God* to save us and keep us.

There is no condemnation being taught here by the Holy Spirit within a believer. It says it is Jesus Christ who has BLESSED US with EVERY spiritual gift and that these are already in the Heavenly places. That we are ALREADY Holy and WITHOUT BLAME before God in Heaven . That God already MADE US acceptable in the Beloved of God and within the family of God forever.

How is that possible when we are obviously still here on Earth and not in heaven in my new resurrected body? The answer to that is also found in the above Scripture where it states, "*...as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world*". We humans have a limited view because we are here stuck *in time and space*. From our viewpoint we are here travelling through time in a forward motion and all these things promised by God for the believer are all *in*

the future for us. But here we see that from the very beginning, when God created the Earth, from BEFORE God created the Earth, the animals, the plants and the human beings. Before Christ went and nailed our sins on the cross even. From way back then, God who is outside time and space sees everything as now. God says He declares the end from the beginning (Isaiah 46:10). He foreknew EVERYTHING that will ever happen *as if it already happened*. He foreknew who would accept Christ's atonement for their sins from before time started. And so He also foreknew and predestined those that will accept Christ and sealed them with the Holy Spirit of God and placed them in Heaven with Him at the appointed time of the Rapture.

God sees us as who we will be after the Rapture. He seen all believers from the very beginning of the Universe as those who we will be in Heaven, Holy, Righteous and redeemed! God lives in the forever present because He exists outside of time and space.

WE HAVE ALL OF THE HOLY SPIRIT FROM THE MOMENT OF OUR SALVATION

Believers have ALL of the Holy Spirit living and dwelling within them. Christ has truly given us 'all things'.

"He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" (Romans 8:32 KJV)

Believers in the redemption through Christ's atonement for sins on the cross are, from the very moment of their Salvation, both filled with the Holy Spirit and also sealed in Salvation.

*"For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us. Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; **Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.**" (2 Corinthians 1:20-22 KJV)*

The Holy Spirit now forever resides with the believer and is our earnest (our guarantee) that we are forever to be with God in Heaven. God the Father is a spirit. Jesus is God in the flesh. The believer is a newly created being *in the Spirit* - never to lose their eternal righteousness of God, in Christ. Jesus describes this relationship of the believer with God like this,

*"Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; **That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us:** that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one." (John 17:20-22 KJV)*

Oh my, what a promise! It is hard for us to believe in our fleshy bodies just how much God has given us through Christ! How deep and great is the unconditional love of God towards us? Absolutely AMAZING! But what about the sins of the Flesh that we commit after our Salvation? Does that disqualify us from our eternal security in Christ?

"But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. " (Romans 8:9 KJV)

That is pretty clear right? Believers are no longer in the Flesh but in the spirit. That is the Holy Spirit now dwells within us. Our fleshy sin nature has been

removed and our Spirit newly created and residing in our fleshly bodies. We are now IN CHRIST. Our fleshly minds have not yet caught up to this and so we still have a sinful mind and that is what the Holy Spirit is renewing in us during our life span.

*"Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: **because as he is, so are we in this world.**" (1 John 4:17 KJV)*

The debt of sins has been paid for in Christ on the cross. God is no longer mad about our sins. God is completely satisfied with the penalty for our sins when He placed it on Christ and nailed Christ to the cross, as our sin (2 Corinthians 5:21).

What is the result of the New Covenant in Christ? Accepting the forgiveness of our sins through Christ and after the Holy Spirit dwells inside a believer. But what about their sins committed after the moment of Salvation? They too were all paid in Christ on the cross. Remember that when Christ died on the cross for you, all your sins were in the future tense, you were not even born yet right?

"I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, but Christ lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me." (Galatians 2:20 KJV)

*"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from **all unrighteousness.**" (1 John 1:9 KJV)*

"...looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of our great God and Savior Jesus Christ, who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from every lawless deed and purify for Himself His own special people, zealous for good works." (Titus 2:13-14 KJV)

ALL means ALL. EVERY means EVERY. All a believers sins are 100% completely forgiven in the New Covenant through Christ Jesus. But how does our sinning affect God after our moment of Salvation? What is God's view of our sinning in the flesh afterwards?

"For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more. In that He says, "A new covenant," He has made the first obsolete. Now what is becoming obsolete and growing old is ready to vanish away." (Hebrews 8:12-13 KJV)

I can hear some of you already.. *'Wait just a minute here, Christians still sin. Doesn't that mean we still have the old sinful bent within? Don't we still have a 'sin nature' within us? We have the Holy Spirit but we also have the Flesh and we still sin.'*

Yes, we still do sin but that is because we do not yet have our new bodies that are not corrupt in the flesh. We still have the flesh, our bodies and our fleshly mind. But our REAL being, our nature at our core, since the moment of our Salvation is not the fleshy body and mind, it is in the inward Spirit, it is our NEW NATURE. We were a NEW CREATION in our core being from that moment. And the Bible is clear that in the Spirit we have been MADE Holy, Righteous and redeemed by and through Christ. It is a subtle yet true difference.

Some get confused by what I am trying to convey because many teachers (I once did too) are calling the flesh as a 'SPIRIT nature' within us, as if it were a second nature to the new creation in the spirit. *There is not two core Spirit natures in a believer.* One sinful and the other perfect. It is not two Spirits warring against each other that Paul spoke about. That is, our ONE true self in the spirit is not TWO opposites. No, our sinful spirit nature was replaced by the newly created Spirit of God. But if that is the case, why do we still have urges to sin? That is the FLESH

MIND which has not been changed yet. In Romans 7, Apostle Paul explains the doctrine of the two natures of a believer; The Flesh and The Newly Created Spirit of God at war against each other.

We need to understand this properly or all kinds of teaching can be off and not correct. It is the FLESH that sins, not the newly created Spirit of God within you. That is why the Rapture to come is needed. In the Spirit we are already *with God*. He and Christ are one and we are one with Christ and so are now one with God. But we cannot be with God in our fleshly sinful bent bodies in Heaven. Heaven is a perfect place. Heaven is the habitation for only those who have been MADE perfect. And we are not perfect while in our fleshly Earthly bodies right now!

When a believer dies he is immediately in the presence of the Lord. *Is their flesh body? NO*. Is our eternal spirit, YES! Our fleshly part stays behind at our death. It is just a tent to the real us. This following verse of Scripture makes it clearer that it is the FLESH that causes us to sin, not our newly created Spirit, that is already with God. I have some comments in brackets that are mine to help you see it more clear. These are my own comments. **Let the Scriptures be the truth.** I am just trying to get you to see what I have been writing about. But once you start looking at other Scriptures it just becomes clearer and clearer.

"For we know that if our earthly house, this tent, (Comment: our flesh body is our Spirit's tent, a temporary place our spirit resides.) is destroyed, we have a building from God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. (Comment: this is the newly created Spirit of God within us from the moment of Salvation. Not created by human means in reproduction. Because the Holy Spirit is dwelling within us, we also are already eternal in the heavens.)

For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed with our habitation which is from heaven, if indeed, having been clothed, we shall not be

found naked. (Comment: if we have the Holy Spirit indwelling us, through Salvation in Christ)

For we who are in this tent groan, being burdened, not because we want to be unclothed, but further clothed, that mortality may be swallowed up by life. (Comment: Not because we want to die physically. But that we want our body to be made whole with the Spirit of God, without the sinful desires of the fleshly body. We have the Spirit but we want our body to match up to the Spirit and be perfect as Jesus is perfect.)

Now He who has prepared us for this very thing is God, who also has given us the Spirit as a guarantee. (Comment: God wants us to have a physical body to inhabit the New Jerusalem and the New Earth in the future but it needs to be without the fleshly sinful desires. He will create this for us in our future and God has prepared us for that by giving us the Spirit dwelling within each believer *as a guarantee* that He will accomplish this at the appointed time of our bodily resurrection! And God's timing is perfect.)

So we are always confident, knowing that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord. (Comment: Our body is physically not present with the Lord in Heaven like our new Spirit is. Yet we are confident that God will make that possible for us because we have the down payment, the Holy Spirit of God living within us.)

For we walk by faith, not by sight. (Comment: We walk by the Spirit of God in faith, believing not by what we see we are doing in the physical flesh which is sinful desires but by the promise of God.)

We are confident, yes, well pleased rather to be absent from the body and to be present with the Lord. (Comment: One day we will be bodily resurrected just as Christ was. Yet, if we die physically before the Rapture event, we have faith in Gods promise that we will be united with a new glorified body at the appointed time of the Rapture.)" (2 Corinthians 5:5-8 NKJV)

God's ultimate goal is for us to be both spirit and body, both completely sanctified and Holy enough to be with God for all eternity in the New Jerusalem on the new Earth in the future. So from now until the Rapture and our bodily resurrection to an immortal body, Christ through the Holy Spirit within us is sanctifying us and renewing our fleshly mind to see things from God's world view and not from the current world view. Until one day, ZAP!.. we have new bodies without the fleshly sinful nature. Then we will be as Christ is. Physical body yet spirit filled.. **complete finally**. It is all God's work in us. Such a promise! Such a hope! A hope that makes anything we go through in life, completely PALE in comparison.

Jesus tells the Apostles and to each of us plainly and truthfully. "These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." (John 16:33 KJV)

"And we know that all things work together for good to those who love God, to those who are the called according to His purpose." (Romans 8:28 NKJV)

THE HOLY SPIRIT CONTINUALLY SANCTIFIES US UNTIL THE RAPTURE

From the very moment of a person's Salvation, the Holy Spirit within a believer now starts the process of sanctification and the renewing of our fleshly mind. The Holy Spirit starts from within the heart of a person, from within our newly created Spirit that is already completely filled and sealed as Perfectly Holy. And the Holy Spirit starts the renewing in our minds by the Word of God. You see our Spirit is newly created already. Our body will also be recreated at the Rapture and then

we will be complete in who God has made us. In the meantime, our fleshly body and mind have not yet totally caught up to our new Spirit.

Paul describes that there is something in us that wars with our newly created Spirit in Christ. And that is *fleshy sin*. But is it us who are sinning? Is it our newly created Spiritual being, the real us, created as new through Christ, who does the sinning now? It is such an important Scripture that shows us that what I am saying here is correct. We are perfect in the Spirit from the very moment of Salvation. It is ***our flesh*** that is warring against our true being, in the Spirit. It is not a second core sin nature spirit warring against God's Holy Spirit nature. Take some time with this Scripture. Reread it several times slowly until you understand this.

*"But sin, that it might appear sin, was producing death in me through what is good, so that sin through the commandment might become exceedingly sinful. For we know that the law is spiritual, but I am carnal, sold under sin. For what I am doing, I do not understand. **For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do**. If, then, I do what I will not to do, I agree with the law that it is good.*

⇒ But now, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me.

For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) nothing good dwells; for to will is present with me, but how to perform what is good I do not find.

⇒ For the good that I will to do, I do not do; but the evil I will not to do, that I practice. Now if I do what I will not to do, it is no longer I who do it, but sin that dwells in me.

*I find then a law, that evil is present with me, the one who wills to do good. For I delight in the law of God **according to the inward man**. But I see another law **in my members**, warring against the law **OF MY MIND** and bringing me into captivity to **the law of sin which is in my members**.*

*O wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this **BODY OF DEATH**.*

⇒ I thank God—through Jesus Christ our Lord!

*⇒ So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God, but **WITH THE FLESH** the law of sin." (Romans 7:13-24 NKJV)*

Do you see it? Paul is telling us it is the flesh sinning and not the new real you in the Spirit. If you are saved and have the Holy Spirit within, you hate it when you sin. You feel guilty after you sin because the Spirit of God dwells within you and you are one with Him. You are sinning when God is standing right there *within you*. It's a horrible feeling isn't it? You feel full of shame, weak, helpless even. You feel as Paul, 'wretched'!

What is God's thought of this though? How is God looking at this situation? To God it only takes ONE sin to disqualify a person from being sinless right? But after Salvation God is already done judging your sins. Remember that Christ called out on the cross 'It Is Finished!'

King David puts it this way,

"For as the heavens are high above the earth, So great is His mercy toward those who fear Him; As far as the east is from the west, So far has He removed our transgressions from us. As a father pities his children, So the Lord pities those who fear Him. For He knows our frame; He remembers that we are dust." (Psalm 103:11-14 KJV)

Nothing takes God by surprise folks. NOTHING. He knows the end from the very beginning. He is the great I AM who is present everywhere, in every time and in every place! (Isaiah 46:10, Matthew 9:4, Psalms 44:21, Psalms 139:7-10, Jeremiah 23:23-24, Proverbs 15:3, Joshua 1:9) He knows our frame, that is God knows what we are like. Frail. Unable to save ourselves from our sins in the flesh. He knew

when you would sin before you ever were born. That is why from the beginning He appointed Jesus to die on the cross for us and to forgive us all our sins, ***'As far as the East is from the West!'*** God's unconditional love is so far above what we think and feel, even in what little faith we have.

You see non believers love to sin, it is just doing what the flesh demands. And they do not have a conscience about their sins committed. They are not worried about their sins before a Holy God, as they do not believe in the God of the Bible. Is that not the way we believers once were? Do whatever makes you happy. Today we live, tomorrow we die. If it feels good just go for it right? God never really was in the picture for us right? And non believers will continue living in their sins unless they are first confronted in the belief that God exists. That is one important reason why God gave us Bible prophecy fulfilled as proof of His existence.

Do not misunderstand me. Believing that God exists *alone* will not save a person from their sins. Even the devil and his fallen angels believe there is a God - yet they tremble (James 2:19) at that fact because soon their sentence of an eternity in hell will soon come to be their reality.

But believing God exists is a step in the right direction to the possibility of being confronted with the truth. If they can stop comparing their goodness against other sinners and instead start comparing their so called goodness with the Holy Perfect God of the universe, there is a chance they will cry out to Him for mercy through Christ. They may drop their pride and instead be humble before God. The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom (Psalm 111:10). The Holy Spirit works externally for a person to give everyone the opportunity to choose. He confronts them with the utter impossibility to remove our sins against a Holy God through our own self righteous deeds. The Ten Commandments accomplished that for all us believers right?

WE DO NOT NEED TO BE CONSTANTLY REFILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT

What is all the teachings by some preachers and some denominations and religious groups that we must continually be *refilled* with the Holy Spirit then? Does the Holy Spirit run out and a person needs to be refilled again and again. Is the Holy Spirit dwelling in a believer like gasoline a car..that slowly gets used until we reach the point that the car starts reminding you that you are low on fuel. Better get refilled or the car will die on the roadside? Does that seem like a reality when God is indwelling us already? What is God, a tank to fill? No! He is the fullest tank that keeps on producing! It is NEVER running on empty.

If the Holy Spirit is within you that YOU already have **ALL of the Spirit of God** dwelling within you. All the fullness of God. You even have ALL the righteousness of God in Christ (2 Corinthians 5:21), who lives within every believer. Believers do not need to be refilled constantly. We do not build up so many sins and then need a refill of the Holy Spirit to clean us again. We are ALREADY FULLY CLEANED in the Spirit, in our true being.

DOESN'T THE BIBLE SAY NOT TO GRIEVE THE SPIRIT?

"And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. " (Ephesians 4:30 KJV)

Does this mean when we sin that God will get angry with us? Is that what this means? Does it mean that if you have the Holy Spirit dwelling within you (which means you are in God's eyes, Holy, Righteous and redeemed) that God will condemn you now because once again you failed and sinned in the flesh? It does not make much sense given the truth of the Scriptures shown does it?

To God, the real you *is the Spirit*. In your spirit being you are *in Christ*. You are ONE with Christ and *without penalty for sin*. God already knew beforehand what sins you would commit. And He nailed them to the cross in Jesus. So your sins are already done with and put away from God. Jesus took that punishment. You will never be condemned for the sins Christ already took the punishment for. NEVER! Christ's sacrifice was 100% sufficient to God the Father.

HOW IS THE HOLY SPIRIT GRIEVED WHEN WE FAIL, AND SIN?

Let's use an analogy to see the truth. Before I was a father to my daughters, I did not understand this. But now I do! I get it! Here is me to my daughter, *"Listen, do NOT run on ice. If you do you are going to get hurt physically and it will affect you badly."* So what happens when I get a call from the school that she hurt her ankle running on the ice in the playground? Am I ready to yell at her or am I firstly concerned for her as my daughter who I love? Do I feel grieved that she did not listen and she got hurt? Yes of course. I did warn her! Does that mean that I am going to disown her and kick her out of the family? Of course not.

Did she disobey me and cause this ankle issue? Yes she did. She has the consequence of the action to deal with (pain, healing time, loss of school studies, more time in school to catch up.) And what do I do? I try to help her in her healing and at the same time, she sees the consequence and hopefully learns from the experience.

God is not looking for robots. He gives us FREE WILL. In our fleshly bodies, we are going to be tempted. We can overcome the temptations but we will sometimes blow it. When we do it grieves the Holy Spirit. Of course it does! And the more a believer knows the Holy Spirit is right there while we are blowing it; we do feel guilty afterwards right? God is not "out there somewhere". He is WITHIN YOU and you cannot get much closer than that! Feeling guilty about a sin you

commit is a sure way to know that the Holy Spirit is correcting you and disciplining you. It is not to condemn you of your sin as some are teaching these days. NO, it is out of love for you.

*"For God did **not** send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world **through Him might be saved.**" (John 3:17 KJV)*

*"My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. **And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.**" (1 John 2:1 KJV)*

WHAT IF A PERSON CONTINUES TO REPEAT A SIN?

As a believer, do you still have a body? The sinful flesh? Yes, you do! Should we try to resist sinning? ***Absolutely!*** In no way am I saying that because we are forgiven we should just go and sin all we want. ***Absolutely not!*** If the Holy Spirit is within you He will correct you and guide you when you sin. If you are living in a continuous sin *and not feeling any guilt about it when you know it is a sin*, you need to question if you actually are saved. The Holy Spirit *always corrects sins in a believer*. It is part of the process of Him sanctifying you and renewing your mind. He will keep renewing your mind in the process of sanctification. But know this, this process *takes time; a lifetime*. Resisting sin is a good thing. It is you trying to keep in line with what the Holy Spirit wants you to do, as He is sanctifying you. Walk in the Spirit and abide in Christ. Read the Bible. Get God's word in you! This is only helping the Holy Spirit in the process of your sanctification. Over time, the Holy Spirit renews your mind by the Word of God and as that happens, you will find that you stop repeating certain sins, or out right stopping them.

"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound? Certainly not! How shall we who died to sin live any longer in it? Or do you not know that as many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into His death? Therefore we were buried with Him through baptism into death, that just as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

*For if we have been united together in the likeness of His death, certainly we also shall be in the likeness of His resurrection, knowing this, that our old man was crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be done away with, that we should no longer be slaves of sin. For he who has died has been freed from sin. **Now if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him, knowing that Christ, having been raised from the dead, dies no more. Death no longer has dominion over Him.** For the death that He died, He died to sin once for all; but the life that He lives, He lives to God. Likewise you also, **reckon yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.***

***Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in its lusts.** And do not present your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin, but present yourselves to God as being alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God. **For sin shall not have dominion over you, for you are not under law but under grace.**" (Romans 6:1-14 KJV)*

Paul is not saying that we lose our salvation if we sin. What he is saying is that Christ has redeemed us from our sins. He has made us DEAD to the Law. Now the Holy Spirit resides within us to help us and renew our fleshly minds. Should we just continue going in the opposite direction to the sanctification process the Holy Spirit is working in us? That sure is the HARD way right? Do not look at not sinning as a requirement under the Law that we need to obey or we will lose our Salvation. Believers have been **made DEAD** to the Law. That is works did not save you right? *Neither do they now to keep you saved!* You are under

grace and forgiveness. Instead we are no longer under the law as a means to be forgiven. We are already forgiven IN CHRIST right?

However, we should be working towards and willingly giving over sin temptation to the Holy Spirit and acknowledge it is wrong. It is good to pray to the Holy Spirit and ask for help in resisting. Asking for help to renew your mind over this temptation that you are struggling with. That is working with the Holy Spirit! God will help you! Even right when you are about to sin. And even pray about it after you already gave into it. It is not that you are asking God to forgive you - He ALREADY did that in Christ! It is that you ask God flat out in honesty.. **I blew it again. Please help me to stop this.** Help renew my mind on this.

What should we do when tempted and we feel like *'Uh oh.. this is a tough one to resist!'* One thing you can do in certain situations is to do as Joseph in Egypt as a slave when tempted to commit adultery with his master's wife enticed him. **He flat out RAN AWAY! Yes get yourself out of that situation and FAST!** And of course, do not get yourself into situations where you know there will be a temptation that you have had difficulty.

DOES THAT MEAN IT IS POSSIBLE TO NEVER SIN AGAIN AFTER SALVATION?

" If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us." (1 John 1:10 KJV)

If I can be truthful in anything it is this.. ***you are going to blow it! You are still going to struggle with sinning after your Salvation.*** You are still in your fleshly sinful body just as I am. Anyone says they have no sin after Salvation, they just cannot get around this one. They are actually calling Jesus a liar! All while they are flat out lying about this. Fighting sin is a daily struggle in this world. However, it is a worthy struggle. Resist hard. Use your faith. Stand firm knowing what Christ

did for us! And what the Holy Spirit is doing to renew our mind to conform to the mind of Christ. Now I say that as one who also blows it! But I keep trying. Not to remain saved.. but because it is just right isn't it?

"My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. " (1 John 2:1 KJV)

The Bible is clear that God disciplines those He loves. He will discipline believers as His children because He loves us and wants to build up our faith in Him, learn that consequences are real and that we should not do that again. But rest in faith that what God says is true in the Bible. Rest on His promise of eternal life and that you cannot lose your Salvation. Your new immortal body will come soon enough and this life we live in the sinful flesh will be less than a second of time in light of us living all eternity with Christ and our fellow Saints.

In Salvation, you always have the **Full Holy Spirit with you**, from the very day and moment of your Salvation, for all eternity!

Chapter 23

Do We Sanctify Ourselves Or Does The Holy Spirit Sanctify Us?

"I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

SANCTIFY THEM THROUGH THY TRUTH: THY WORD IS TRUTH.

As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth." (John 17:15-19 KJV)

When a person believes Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, who was with God before the foundation of the world, and that He as God became human for the purpose of paying the penalty for OUR sins, and rose from the dead, that person *IS MADE* the very righteousness of God, in Christ.

"Being then MADE FREE from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness." (Romans 6:18 KJV)

"For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might BE MADE the righteousness of God in him." (2 Corinthians 5:21 KJV)

Such a believer has become one with Christ, who is one with the Father. And so that person has been made one with the Father as well. This is a truth that many believers fail to grasp because after our moment of Salvation in Christ, we

still have our mortal flesh and sin nature. We are not yet complete in Christ from our mortal perspective. And we will not be until our bodily Resurrection when the sin nature in us will be removed.

However, to God, He foreknew every person that would accept His unmerited Free GIFT of Salvation from before the foundation of the Earth. When Moses asked God at the burning bush what name of God to tell Pharaoh sent him, the reply was 'I AM THAT I AM'.

This is significant! Our God lives in the forever present. By that, I mean that God sees our past, present and future all at the same time. God knew before he created you and me, who would accept Christ and who would reject Christ.

The Bible says there is '*The Wicked*' and '*The Righteous*'. To us living in time, we all start out in the 'wicked' group from the age of accountability. And "whosoever" accepts Christ, God predestined to conform to His image (Ephesians 1) and become the Righteousness of God, IN CHRIST. To God, we are already in Heaven and the New Jerusalem with Him because God exists in all times. He is the great "I AM". Hard for us to grasp right? So when you fail, when you fall into sin, when you stumble as a believer, remember that NOTHING you do takes God by surprise. He has it all worked out before you were even born.

"And we know that ALL THINGS work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose." (Romans 8:28 KJV)

Knowing this to be true is a real wake up call. We are to God already completely righteous. Because we Christians are so good? No. It is because what Christ did on the cross when He shed His blood for the remission of our sins (Matthew 26:28). When a person accepts the Gift of Salvation the Holy Spirit

indwells the person. He then starts to guide and teach and sanctify the person (John 14:26).

DO WE SANCTIFY OURSELVES OR DOES THE HOLY SPIRIT SANCTIFY US?

In John 17:17, Jesus answers this question.

"SANCTIFY THEM THROUGH THY TRUTH: THY WORD IS TRUTH."

Before Jesus became human His name was The Word. (John 1) Jesus Christ is not only the truth, He is the way and the life!

"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John 14:6 KJV)

Jesus Christ is the only wayback to a proper relationship with God. Such a relationship requires a perfectly Holy Righteousness but we have sins committed standing in the way of this. That is why *The Word* (Christ) became human, never sinned, and shed His blood for the remission of our sins. Believing in the atonement for our sins through the Passion of Christ, God *made us* the Holy Righteousness of God, in Him.

WHAT IS OUR PART THOUGH?

Again, what should we do as believers? First, thank God for such an amazing gift of Salvation from our sin debt! Second, read the Bible because it is God's Word and the absolute truth. The more you read the Bible and the words of

Jesus the more you are helping the Holy Spirit renew your mind. You will see the truth and be set free from the guilt of your sins and set free from the punishment of your sins. You will look at things from God's viewpoint and not the world's viewpoint and that will empower you to accomplish the good works of God through you.

"Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall MAKE YOU free." (John 8:31-32 KJV)

Notice the word '*make*'. The Bible does not ever say it is our efforts making us saved and righteous before God. And it is not our own efforts that sanctify us completely. Only the Holy Spirit renews our minds and changes us from the inner self outwardly. That said, by reading the truth from the word of God we are pressing toward the goal of the Holy Spirit. It says over and over again what Jesus said in John 8. It is God alone that MAKES US positionally righteous and justified. It is never our works accomplishing this. It is our belief in Christ, the Lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world! (John 1:29)

Writing to even the *the carnal believers* in Corinthians Paul makes this statement,

"For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day." (2 Corinthians 4:16 KJV)

And we see in Titus,

"Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the

Holy Ghost; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.” (Titus 3:5-7 KJV)

Paul also makes it clear that *we should do our part* in this renewing of our mind. How a person thinks and believes about the world will determine their actions in the world. A person's viewpoint is an important key factor in how a person lives. We all begin with the world's viewpoint. And who is controlling the world's viewpoint of truth? The Bible says it is our adversary, Satan.

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.” (Ephesians 6:12 KJV)

In Ephesians 6, Paul continues and is telling us to put on the whole armour of God and it is all about knowing the truth in the Bible and allowing this to transform us. And that means we should be studying the word of God to know the truth. Knowing the truths in the Bible will also protect us from our adversary!

*“Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about **with truth**, and having on the breastplate **of righteousness**; And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking **the shield of faith**, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take **the helmet of salvation**, and **the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:**” (Ephesians 6:13-17 KJV)*

We have our part to do in the Holy Spirit's work of renewing our mind to God's view point and truth. You still have free choice after the moment of your

Salvation to walk by the Spirit in truth (by God's word) or to walk by the flesh in carnality as the Corinthians were doing. Are you still saved either way after Salvation? Yes. Paul called the Corinthians *believers*. Does that mean there are no consequences for sin and we can just keep sinning and ignoring God's word without consequences? No!

We have our part to do and why would we not want to know the truth from God's word? Jesus redeemed us with His shed blood and has given us all things. Christ says in John 15 to abide in Him and His words and Christ will abide in us.

Do not just listen to Pastors or Priests. Do not just read my articles or e-books and believe. No.. start reading your Bible after your moment of Salvation, having received this most amazing GIFT from God. The Holy Spirit within a believer will Sanctify you and guide and teach you the truth.

"And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God." (Romans 12:2 KJV)

When that happens over time, you will be changed and conformed more and more into the image of Christ. God will place desires in you to accomplish good works He has prepared for you to perform.

***Want to help the Holy Spirit?
Fill yourself with the Word of God!
READ IT.***

Chapter 24

The Godly Sifting Of A Person

“And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.” (Luke 22:31-34 KJV)

Have You Been Sifted Yet? Whenever Jesus calls a person by name more than once in a conversation, He is emphasizing how important what He is about to say is. “*Simon, Simon,*” is what Jesus said to Peter. This was of course at the Last Supper just prior to Jesus being taken into custody. The next days would be very hard on Jesus as the very moment and point of His life, indeed the very purpose He came for, was upon Him now. He is about to face the utmost in human torture and even separation from God the Father; something He never dealt with before in Eternity where the Father and Jesus (the word) were always one together. And even then, knowing what He was going to go through, Jesus still cared for His disciples greatly, thinking of what they are about to go through!

The disappointment and discouragement felt by the Apostles and even their own shame was about to come pressing down upon them. Peter probably thought he would never deny Jesus. He knew that Jesus was the long awaited Messiah. He exclaimed in protest that he would go to prison and even suffer death with Jesus and not deny Christ. Yet Satan sifted Peter as wheat and he did just what he thought he would never be capable of doing. Have you ever felt like that?

You NEVER thought you could '*do such a thing*', yet one day there you are doing what you thought you would never do! The sinful fleshly mind in us is indeed a powerful force in our lives.

Jesus said that although He is allowing Satan to sift Peter, he prayed for Him. Jesus knew he would not escape the sifting. The point is that even before Peter denied Christ, Jesus was praying that it would not end His faith but increase it. "And when you come back, strengthen your brethren". You see, all the apostles (not just Peter) scattered in fear. John is the only one we see at the foot of the cross. That is interesting to me because John wrote that *he was the disciple Jesus loved*, while Peter was the disciple that said *he loved Jesus*.

And what about Judas? Almost to the point of losing all hope and faith. Judas could not take it. Not only did he misjudge what the Sanhedrin were really going to do, he betrayed Jesus. He could have asked for forgiveness and believed but instead he killed himself. Judas was with the disciples and Jesus – He knew Him first hand. He was in the 'inner circle' right? Yet, Judas did not believe salvation in Christ as Messiah. What he wanted was for Jesus to end Roman occupation and rule. He tried to force God's hand to do things his way.

We know that not only did Peter come back from this incident, he seen the risen Christ and went on to preach and see the salvation of thousands of people during his lifetime and countless millions after his death. So have you ever felt like you are being sifted? Maybe you feel like you are being sifted right now. If so, Keep the faith! God has NOT abandoned you even if you feel like He has. You must remember about the character of God and His attributes and keep the faith in God.

Remember that God is not disappointed when you fail in your faith. Nothing takes God by surprise and He knows everything you will do in your entire life from eternity past! And even so, Jesus prays to the Father on our behalf! Jesus Christ is our mediator between humankind and God the Father.

“For there is ONE God, and ONE mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; Who gave himself A RANSOM for all, to be testified in due time.” (1 Timothy 2: 5-6 KJV)

Be of good cheer. Even Christ said that in this world we will have trouble... But fear not for He has (past tense) overcome the world (John 16:33). We all fall and blow it at times by walking in the flesh. But we need to get back up and dust ourselves off knowing that we are still saved and that God cares for us. Ask for forgiveness and strength for our faith in Christ and move forward; Shake it off. God will remain with you through it all. He will make all things work for your good. God is faithful to finish what He has started in you!

“Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:” (Philippians 1:6 KJV)

Chapter 25

The Importance Of Hearing God's Word

*"So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God."
(Romans 10:17 KJV)*

You may have heard by many preachers and teachers something along the lines of "Don't be just readers of the Bible but be doers." Well, that is true and we really should apply what God says in the Bible into our daily life. However, it is the Holy Spirit doing the good works and helping us to bear good fruit (John 15). In fact, it is actually more important first to understand the truth of the Bible and God. It is the Holy Spirit that will guide your paths to understanding the truth about your life and your relationship to God.

Imagine a new kindergarten student on the first day of school. She is told the story of the three little pigs and the big bad wolf. She thinks it is a nice story but does not yet grasp the meaning of the story she has only heard once nor how it can apply to her life. Then she goes to her other friends not yet in school and tells them that the big bad wolf has a breathing problem because he is always huffing and puffing. She has not yet grasped the true meaning, nor has she learned something about life yet from the story. She just knows the pigs are good, the wolf is bad and he has a breathing problem.

So when a person is led by the Holy Spirit to learn about our sinfulness and the perfect Holiness of God, and how we need to be saved; they may accept God's gift of salvation by faith. However, that is only *the starting point* to learning about God and all the Bible truths yet to be discovered. Should such a very new crisp believer start informing their friends about the truth of the Bible? We would not

expect a new born baby to go tell other new born babies about the greatness of apple sauce would we? New believers also need to do more study and learning so that they are equipped to help others know about the truth of the Bible and salvation.

And just think about the fact that Jesus did not start His ministry on Earth until He was 33 years old! And that was not a young person back in those days either. Jesus was brought up in the Jewish faith and reading and hearing the Torah was a constant standard practice. If it took the Son Of God, 33 years to start proclaiming salvation, who are we to start too early too?

Before I started reading the Bible, I was listening to Christian Radio broadcasts. These broadcasts were God's way of filling my mind with the truth, a little at a time, over time. Through listening so much, it really impacted my life in learning what the Bible really says about life. It is amazing when I look back and see all God has shown me and taught me.. from HEARING the word.

HEARING THE WORD AND LISTENING TO THE WORD ARE OF PARAMOUNT IMPORTANCE TO A NEW BELIEVER!

God wants to impact your MIND and have you change the way you think about who you are in Christ. Who the Bible says you are in Christ *is the real you now!* The Holy Spirit will do so by you hearing and listening and hearing and listening and hearing God's word again and again. Reading the Scriptures and listening to them is very important. By doing so we are working towards the goal of the Holy Spirit which is renewing your mind to God's viewpoint. Until one day, you know you are finally abiding in the words of Jesus. The words of the truth and life everlasting. And then God will place desires in your heart for good works He has set before us to accomplish.

And make sure you understand the difference between hearing the word of God and listening to the word of God. I guarantee you that you can hear a teacher talk all day but if you were not listening you will fail the upcoming exams.

START LISTENING WITH FAITH TO THE WORD OF GOD

“For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. ” (Hebrews 4:2 KJV)

Below are some great Bible verses for you to read to yourself. These are the words of life you need to get into your mind again and again.

“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.” (Romans 12:1-2 KJV)

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.” (Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)

“Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law. ” (Romans 3:28 KJV)

“But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. ” (Romans 4:5 KJV)

“For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he

being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.” (James 1:23-25 KJV)

“Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David.” (Isaiah 55:2-3 KJV)

“And said, If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is right in his sight, and wilt give ear to his commandments, and keep all his statutes, I will put none of these diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the LORD that healeth thee. ” (Exodus 15:26 KJV)

“And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.” (Deuteronomy 28: 1-2 KJV)

“This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?” (Galatians 3:2-5 KJV)

Chapter 26

How Should A Christian Live After Salvation?

*“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.”
(Ephesians 2:8-9 KJV)*

Being a real Christian is being a follower of Jesus the Christ, the Messiah and Saviour of the world. If you believe that Jesus was God who became human through the virgin Mary, that He lived a sinless life and that He died on the cross to take upon Himself the punishment for the sins of the whole world, and you have asked Him to forgive you and save you, then you are saved from that very moment. You have asked for the forgiveness of your sins through Christ's act of atonement and accepted His free gift of salvation from your sins. You believe in the sufficiency of Christ's atonement and that you are no longer under God's condemnation but are part of the redeemed and Bride Of Christ. You have received the very righteousness of God, in Christ. Salvation is a free gift to be received.

The question for a new believer is then, *Now what do I do?* How does God want me to live? First you need to know this one important fact; you will still sin after your conversion. Try your best all you want but you will still have sin in your life. You are no better than an unsaved person in regard to sin. The difference though is that positionally you are 100% forgiven for all your life's sins because

Jesus paid your sin debt. You are no longer condemned nor will you be judged to eternal death with the unbelievers.

Does that mean I am saying to go ahead and sin all you want? Absolutely NOT. Out of gratitude and knowing what a high price was paid for your redemption through the shed blood and pain of Christ on the cross you should be trying to not sin. Believers have been given a NEW SPIRIT and that Spirit is as Righteous as Christ (2 Cor. 5:21). We live because we are IN CHRIST in the Spirit. Yes, absolutely you do need to start turning from your sinful ways while asking God to help you and to change you.

You need to understand that not sinning after salvation is not a requirement of your salvation. Salvation is not of works and is only through faith in the atonement that Jesus Christ provided for your forgiveness. This also does not mean that Christians never sin again once they accept the salvation of Christ.

"If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us." (1 John 1:10 KJV)

"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments." (1 John 2:1-3 KJV)

As Christians we are to resist sin in an increasing manner and to keep the commandments of Jesus to the best of our abilities as Christians. Now when I say "His commandments" I am talking about the law of liberty through Christ and not the Ten Commandments. It is in fact, something that a true Christian WANTS to do as we learn about God more and more. The Holy Spirit resides in every person that has repented (believed on Christ). As the Holy Spirit renews our minds over time,

we start making a real effort to turn from our sin in an increasing basis during our life.

Because it is something WE NEED to do to remain saved? No. Because God starts changing our world view as we learn the truth from the Word of God and this will outwardly produce good works. Not that doing so saves us from our sin debt, Christ forgave our sins on the cross *once and for all* (*Hebrews 10:10, Romans 6:10*). Our salvation was God's unmerited favour towards us and 100% God's work through Christ. But once we have become a member of the family of God by receiving the free gift of salvation we start changing because the Holy Spirit starts to guide us in truth. This change in a persons life is a result of what God is doing in the life of a Christian. This is how we should be living after salvation. In Romans 12, the Apostle Paul sums this up very nicely and so here is the entire text for you to review and gain a better understanding:

"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith. For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: So we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; Or ministry, let us wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching; Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with

simplicity; he that ruleth, with diligence; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness.

Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.

Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another; Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.

Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. Be of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.” (Romans 12 KJV)

As a believer in the complete sufficiency of Christ Jesus on that cross with His shed blood sacrifice for all sin, salvation is attained by belief on His death and rising again. That stated, please understand that because we have a new Spirit of God with the Holy Spirit indwelling us, we SHOULD have good works, right living and avoiding sin as much as possible. Having this new core being in us, God gave us the power to overcome sin. Sin should not have dominion over us anymore.

*“That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath **delivered us from the power of darkness**, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:” (Colossians 1: 10-13 KJV)*

*“Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more **dominion** over him. ” (Romans 6:9 KJV)*

*“For sin shall not have **dominion** over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace. ” (Romans 6:14 KJV)*

This English translated word DOMINION found in Romans 6:9 is defined in Strong's Greek concordance as **ko-ree-yoo'-o; from G2962; to rule:—have dominion over, lord, be lord of, exercise lordship over.** Paul goes on and writes,

“What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.” (Romans 6:15-18 KJV)

THERE HAS BEEN A PRISON BREAK IN YOU BELIEVER !

It is not that we have to live perfectly without sin after our moment of salvation by belief on Christ (John 3:14-18, Ephesians 1:13-14) or lose our salvation. It is because we have been given a newly created Spirit, and that sin will not rule our lives. I encourage you to read all of Romans 5 and 6 carefully as one writing.

Before belief on Christ for righteousness we were trapped in sin; **a prison of unrighteousness**. No good works could erase our debt of sin against our Holy God. Headed for condemnation unable to erase our sin debt, **servants of sin** because our core being, the Spirit was a sinful nature.

But now as a born again believer, God MADE YOU the very righteousness of God , in Christ. **HE HAS TRANSLATED YOU FRO THE PRISON OF UNRIGHTEOUSNESS TO THE PRISON OF RIGHTEOUSNESS**. In this, we are now servants to righteousness, not sin. And now, no sin we committed will erase our righteousness. Jesus made sure of that on the cross with His shed blood, death and rising again. I am shouting in my heart just writing this small paragraph! Yet, a large portion of the Christian community does not understand just how powerful this truth really is. A born again believer is the very righteousness of God, in Christ. Paul explains it again in 2 Corinthians 2:5.

This all being the case, yes, we should have good works after salvation. Not to keep us saved but because we have been changed in our core being, the Spirit.

*“For we are **HIS WORKMANSHIP, created in Christ Jesus unto good works,** which God hath before ordained that **we should walk in them.** “
(Ephesians 2:10 KJV)*

CHRISTIAN LIVING CAN BE A STRUGGLE AT TIMES

Some of Jesus' commandments are not easy to do at times are they? Like *Bless those that persecute you* and *Repay no one evil for evil*, as examples. But isn't that what God did to us? When we were still full of a sin debt and headed for God's judgment and were His enemies, He sent His Son Jesus Christ to die for our sins so we could be saved from His wrath to come? Yes, we are saved, redeemed, and no longer condemned for our sin. But that does not mean that we can go ahead and sin because the debt is paid?

Remember, our sin is the reason Jesus died for us with such a horrible death taking on the punishment we deserve. God has allowed you and me into His family where we now call him *Father, Daddy, Abba*. Shouldn't we try our very best to resist temptations and sin in our lives? Oh yes, we will still sin. That old sinful mind, our old man, The Flesh we still have, means that we struggle against it within us pushing us to sin. But we should be struggling and resisting as hard as we can. And when we do fall to sin, Jesus is there saying I forgave you, now... go and sin no more.

"Jesus went unto the mount of Olives. And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?"

This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though he heard them not. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him

first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

*When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? 11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, **Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.**" (John 8:1-11 KJV)*

You will hear some preachers tell you that you must not sin or the judgment of God is upon you and you will lose your salvation. Ignore them because they are teaching a false Gospel of works salvation. Something that Paul spoke very strongly against as you can see by reading Galatians. And isn't it interesting that in the above Scripture that Jesus did not say to the woman, "Go and sin no more, nether do I condemn you" .. NO! He said, **FIRST**, "neither do I condemn you" **and then** "go and sin no more". So yes, try to not sin. But stand firm in your belief in the total sufficiency of Christ's atonement on the cross, knowing all your sins are done away with and the penalty has been fully paid. You are no longer condemned for your sins. Instead, focus on your new state of **RIGHTEOUSNESS** because that is who you truly are now and let that work out through your life in love for others, more and more. Paul called this '*walking by the Spirit to avoid the lusts of the flesh*' in Galatians 5:16. Do not be sin conscious, be righteousness conscious (Hebrews 10:2)

At the Bema Seat Rewards Judgment (1 Corinthians 3) by Christ to believers , you can see that believers may lose rewards and gain rewards by their good works for Christ. However, understand that this Bema judgment is similar to an athletic competition ceremony. It is not punitive against sins committed because those at this judgment are already Harpazo/Raptured and have new immortal

bodies without the sinful fleshly mind present. This judgment seat is in Heaven and is strictly for the saved.

In fact, the word *“sin or sins”* is not even found regarding this judgment of believers. Their sins on Earth were already judged on the cross in Jesus Christ. The Bema Seat is where Christ will have believers give an account of our lives after salvation and is based on our MOTIVES for the works we do for God. God always looks at a persons motives. Those works that were done in the flesh (that is by us attempting to do them for the wrong human reasons) will mean a loss of reward. Those works done with the right motives for God and by the Holy Spirit through will receive reward. That is, by what we do and WHY we did the works. So yes, it is important to want to please God and be involved in His work. Yet, even a person who accepted Christ with no works will still be saved and in heaven yet with little or no reward. (1 Corinthians 3:13). Everyone will suffer some loss of rewards and gain of rewards. Some may not receive a reward and feel some shame about it. But overall the feeling is like that of school graduation or an Olympic rewards ceremony. It is a positive event and all at this Bema Seat event are all in Heaven where joy abounds in ways that we cannot yet even comprehend fully right now here on Earth. Who wants to have no reward at this event? Move forward in good works and love for others as believers. It is just the right thing to do and our hearts should be flowing in our new eternal state of righteousness, in Christ.

Paul describes life after salvation as *a race to press toward* knowing what awaits at the finish line. As a new believer, your number one goal is to learn about God and His ways. Start reading the Bible. Use the free study guides found online – there are thousands! The more you know the Bible, the more the Holy Spirit is working in you and guiding you in your life. Your salvation happened in a single moment in time, appointed by God and now the Holy Spirit of God lives within you and will teach you all things. He will start to sanctify you in your Earthly life as well, which continues increasingly throughout your life until that day when you will be

resurrected at the Rapture. Just pray to your heavenly Father for Him to help and He will. I guarantee you that!

Jesus says to believers,

“And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.”

(Revelation 22:12 KJV)

Chapter 27

The Blessed Hope. The Rapture.

Although the English word *Rapture*, as it is commonly known today, is not found in the English Bible, the event most certainly is. Christ foretold that He will return for all that *are His*, all that believe in Christ and who have accepted His atonement for our sins on the cross *by faith alone*. The Lord Jesus Christ is about to return and take believers to a physical place; *The New Jerusalem* known as Heaven.

“For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.”
(1 Thessalonians 4:14-17 KJV)

Christ foretold that He will return for all that are His, all that believe in Christ who have accepted His atonement for our sins and know Him as Lord.

“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.” (John 14:1-3 KJV)

Jesus has been preparing this dwelling place for us since he ascended to Heaven over 2000 years ago and at that time the Apostles gazed into the sky as Jesus ascended. And then angels appeared , *“Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. ”* (Acts 1:11 KJV)

A day is coming when Jesus will return for His own. He will not be born like last time. He already has a physical and yet spiritual immortal body that He took with Him when He ascended! And He will return as He left us... In the heavens... *literally right out of the sky!*

*“For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. **Wherefore comfort one another with these words.**” (1 Thessalonians 4: 15-18 KJV)*

Believers who accepted Christ's atonement will be snatched off the planet swiftly. The Original Greek for 'caught up' is 'harpázō' which means *'properly, **seize by force; snatch up, suddenly and decisively** – like someone seizing bounty (spoil, a prize); to take by **an open display of force** (i.e. not covertly or secretly)'*

At the Rapture, the dead in Christ will rise first. Then believers living at the time of the Rapture event will be given new spiritual, yet also physical bodies like Christ received when He rose from the dead and then “whoosh” we will meet him in the air. (And this all happens in a *“twinkling of the eye”* (1 Corinthians 15:52) – less time than an eye blink! It will virtually be instantaneous to us.

NEW SPIRITUAL BODIES, FREE FROM THE FLESHLY SIN NATURE

When Jesus resurrects the dead in Christ, they are given the same kind of spiritual body Christ had when he rose from the dead. He could appear out of nowhere, walk through locked doors, yet he could be touched and felt. 1 Corinthians 15 starting verse 35 says of the new body at our resurrection,

“But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.”

1 Corinthians 15 continues,

“So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.”

And it continues showing that we all fell into sin from Adam's original sin yet we are saved from the second Adam that knew no sin but died for us; Jesus the Christ!

It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven. As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord."

The last to be conquered is DEATH! At the Rapture event, Christ returns when unbelievers (and some believers too) are not expecting it. It is an event that can happen at anytime now. In fact, Jesus said in Matthew 24, *"But about that day or hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father."* Yet believers who read and hear the Word of God can hear the footsteps because now we are living in the last days and it is closer than ever before!

“But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” (Matthew 24: 37-39 KJV)

The Rapture is an Emergency Escape From *The Tribulation Period*, from the very Wrath of God against all sinners who have not received God's pardon from sins through faith in the atonement for sins provided by Christ on the cross. The Apostle Paul told the Thessalonians,

“But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

BUT YE, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober. For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.” (1 Thessalonians 5: 1-10 KJV)

Take notice that this is saying that God has not appointed believers to face His Wrath. That is, the wrath of the Day of the Lord, the Tribulation Period wrath

judgments on Earth. It does not mean that Christians will never face persecution on Earth – that has been happening since Pentecost. Christ said,

“These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.” (John 16:33 KJV)

So redeemed Christians will face troubles and persecution and trials in life. But that is NOT the WRATH of God. It is the world placing these things on a Christian. The Wrath of God is on the unbeliever because an unbeliever has not accepted forgiveness of sins through Christ and as such their sin remains and they remain condemned already and the wrath of God is on them now. (John 3:5-21) And the wrath of God will be poured out during the Day Of The Lord – The soon coming Great Tribulation Period foretold in the Book of Revelation.

Remember that Christ died on the cross and took away the sin of the world and He gives us a **free gift** of salvation: a full pardon for our sin against God. As God, he is perfectly loving, yes. But he is also perfectly just. And since we know that the wages of sin is death, (Romans 6:23) what can God do? So He became human never sinning and died on the cross and took upon Himself the punishment for our sins. In His perfect mercy and love it was the only way to satisfy his very being. He was perfect in love and perfect in mercy to forgive us and His justice of death for sinning was also satisfied.

God will not force anyone to accept His free gift of salvation and eternal life. Those that reject such a great love and sacrifice have chosen themselves to reject God's only way to save them from His wrath against sinners.

"And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead." (Acts 17:30-31 KJV)

What more do you want God to do? We sinned. He saved us and all we have to do is repent (change our mind about God and how to deal with our sin problem) and believe the Gospel of Jesus Christ to receive His free gift of salvation. We are fast approaching Christ's return for His bride of believers. The signs of the End times provided by Daniel and Jesus are already beginning to take place (Matthew 24:3-8), next on God's appointed time line is the Rapture and then the Seven Year Tribulation Period on those left behind. Christ's offer of Salvation to you still stands!

"Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. " (Revelation 3:20 KJV)

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. " (John 3:16 KJV)

Will you accept the forgiveness of Holy God Almighty? The simplicity of the Gospel message is, ask Jesus to forgive all your sins, past, present and future, believing He is God and that He died on the cross and took the punishment we deserved upon Himself so we could escape His wrath to come.

The Rapture Is Coming Soon.. Are you Ready?

Chapter 28

The Bema Seat Judgment Of Believers

ARE ALL PEOPLE JUDGED BY GOD AT THE SAME TIME?

I see this many times where a person mentions that everyone will be judged and that those not found in the Lambs Book Of Life will not enter heaven. Where does this come from? What Scripture are they referring too? If you do a search for the phrase *"Lamb's Book Of Life"* in the Bible there is only ONE VERSE containing this phrase. That makes it a very specific Scripture and we need to look at the context of the verse to see who this is speaking about.

"And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life." (Revelation 21:27 KJV)

Where is it they will *'in no wise enter'*? What is Revelation 21 speaking about? Let's go back a few verses to see. Let's go to the very first two verses in Revelation 21 where we find the answer to this question.

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband." (Revelation 21:1-2 KJV)

It is very clear that Revelation 21 is talking about the NEW heavens and the NEW Earth that God sends us in a time period occurring *after the 1000 year reign of Christ* on the current Earth on which we now live. This is not talking about those of us now living in the Age of Grace before the Rapture. It is also not talking about Old Testament Saints. It is talking about those after the 1000 year reign of Christ.

THERE ARE TWO RETURNS OF CHRIST

A time is soon coming that Jesus will return for His Bride, that is all believers in Christ. Those who have accepted His gift of eternal life through the atonement provided by Christ on the cross. He will return first in the clouds and will call all believers in the graves to rise again with immortal bodies and meet Him in the air. Then those believers that remain and are alive on Earth will instantly be changed to immortal bodies and will also meet Christ in the air. (see, 1 Thessalonians 4) This event is referred to by many as the Rapture of the Church, or the Rapture of the Bride.

After a 7 year period on Earth for those left behind (known as *The Tribulation Period* in the Bible) Jesus Christ will return, along with His Bride that was Raptured. Christ will at this time set His feet on the Earth. This event is called *The Second Coming of Christ*. There will be many events that take place in the Tribulation and the Second Coming of Christ that are too vast for the current topic but you can read up on these events as there is a lot of material on this subject. It is a fascinating topic and very relevant to our current time and on God's timetable for history.

During the 7 year Tribulation time period many will come to Christ and be saved. Most will lose their life in doing so as the Antichrist persecutes them (Revelation 6:9). Those believers who survive the Antichrist's assaults will remain on the Earth to repopulate in the 1000 year reign of Christ on Earth. Christ will have

His Arch Angel grab Satan, bound him in chains, and cast him into the bottomless pit for 1000 years. (Revelation 20:1-3) Christ and His Bride return and take over the world governments and the world system. Christ will flip everything back to the way it was in Eden, before the fall of humankind. For 1000 years Satan will not be able to affect, nor infect, people with his deceptions of pride.

FIRST THE RAPTURE, THEN THE BEMA SEAT OF CHRIST

After the Rapture of the Bride of Christ believers will find themselves at what the Apostle Paul refers to as *The Bema Seat of Christ Judgment Of Believers*. At the Bema Seat Rewards Judgment (1 Corinthians 3), you can see that believers may lose rewards and gain rewards by their good works for Christ. However, understand that this Bema judgment is similar to an athletic competition ceremony. It is not punitive against sins committed because those at this judgment are *already Raptured* and have new immortal bodies without the fleshly sinful mind present. Only believers and *The Saved* will be found at this judgment.

In fact, the words *sin or sins* is not even found regarding this judgment of believers. Their sins on Earth were already judged on the cross in Jesus Christ 2000 years ago. The Bema Seat is where Christ will have us give an account of our lives after our moment of salvation and is based on our MOTIVES for the works we do for God.

God always looks at a persons motives. Those works that were done in the flesh (that is by us attempting to do them for the wrong human reasons) will mean a loss of reward. Those works done with the right motives for God and by the Holy Spirit through us will receive reward. That is, by what we do and why we did the works. So yes, it is important to want to please God and be involved in His work. Yet, even a person who accepted Christ with no works who lived mostly a carnal Christian life not abiding in the Bible, will still be saved and in heaven *yet*

with little or no reward (1 Corinthians 3:13). Everyone will suffer some loss of rewards and gain of rewards. Some may not receive a reward at all and feel shame and regret for a life squandered after Salvation. Yet, overall, the feeling is like that of school graduation or an Olympic rewards ceremony. It is a positive event and all at this Bema Seat event are all in Heaven where joy abounds in ways that we cannot yet even comprehend fully right now here on Earth.

Paul describes life after salvation as a race to press toward knowing what awaits at the finish line. As a new believer, your number one goal is to learn about God and His ways. Start reading the Bible. Use the free study guides found online – there are thousands! The more you know the Bible, the more the Holy Spirit is working in you and guiding you in your life. Your salvation happened in a single moment in time, appointed by God and now the Holy Spirit of God lives within you and will teach you all things. He will start to sanctify you and renew your mind to God's viewpoint which continues increasingly throughout your life until that day when you will be resurrected at the Rapture. Just pray to your heavenly Father for Him to help and He will. I guarantee you that!

Jesus says to believers,

“And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.” (Revelation 22:12 KJV)

About The Author

Don Gerrity is not a preacher. He is not a leader of a church organization. He uses his talents in writing to help share the Gospel to the lost and to help encourage other believers. Don does not lead in an organization, nor an organizational church, though he does frequent many of the top Facebook Christian groups.



Don is owner of the SeekKnockFind.org website. A growing FREE resource with Christian articles, YouTube video playlists and links to other Christian resources. The goal of the SeekKnockFind.org website is to help new believers expand their knowledge of the truth in Salvation through Jesus Christ and to show non-believers why Christianity and the Holy Bible can be believed with full assurance that the Bible is the truth.



SeekKnockFind.org

Selected Bibliography

McGee , Dr. James Vernon. Faith + 0 = Salvation. U.S.A.: Thru the Bible Radio Network, Revised 2006.

Jeffrey ,Grant R. . Heaven - The Last Frontier. Toronto: Frontier Research Publications, 1990.